# EFFECTS OF ELEVATED ATMOSPHERIC CARBON DIOXIDE CONCENTRATION AND NUTRIENT ENRICHMENT ON FRESHWATER PLANT SPECIES

Guyo Duba Gufu

MSc. (Ecology), Victoria University of Wellington



Department of Biological Sciences

Macquarie University

North Ryde 2109

Australia

Thesis submitted for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy, December 2018

### **TABLE OF CONTENTS**

9

	U
General abstract	iii
Certificate	iv
Acknowledgements	V
Chapter 1. Introduction	1
Thesis scope & structure	8

# Chapter 2. The current status of exotic freshwater vascular plants in Australia - a systematic description.

References

Abstract	19
Introduction	20
Methods	22
Results	25
Discussion	35
References	40
Supplementary materials	46

# Chapter 3. Responses of two invasive exotic and one native freshwater plant species to low additional nitrate doses.

Abstract	53
Introduction	54
Methods	57
Results	63
Discussion	70
References	76
Supplementary materials	84

# Chapter 4. Growth, reproduction and functional trait responses of three freshwater plant species to elevated carbon dioxide.

Abstract	88
Introduction	89
Methods	92

Results	96
Discussion	100
References	105
Supplementary materials	111

#### Chapter 5. Responses of invasive and naturalised ornamental freshwater plant species to elevated carbon dioxide concentration and nutrient enrichment.

Abstract	115
Introduction	116
Methods	119
Results	123
Discussion	131
References	136

# Chapter 6. Are interactions between the native *Azolla filiculoides* and exotic *Salvinia molesta* mediated by elevated CO<sub>2</sub> and nutrient enrichment?

Abstract	143
Introduction	144
Methods	149
Results	153
Discussion	159
References Supplementary materials	164
	172
Chapter 7. Discussion	175
References	187

Abstract

1

#### **GENERAL ABSTRACT**

2 Despite being extremely species-rich and highly threatened, freshwater ecosystems 3 have not attracted as much conservation and research efforts as terrestrial or marine 4 ecosystems, specifically in relation to global environmental change. Therefore, the 5 overarching aim of this thesis was to examine the effects of rising atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> 6 concentration ([CO<sub>2</sub>]) and altered nutrient conditions on a select number of invasive exotic 7 freshwater plant species relative to their native and naturalised counterparts in Australia. 8 Firstly, a systematic description to establish the current status of exotic freshwater plant 9 species with reproducing wild populations in Australia was conducted. It was found that 10 there are 63 exotic freshwater species with wild populations including 14 nationally 11 invasive species and 10 species that are invasive in some states (declared weeds). Europe, 12 South America and North America were the main sources of these species and the most 13 important introduction pathway was the ornamental plant trade. The systematic description 14 was then followed by experiments testing the growth, reproduction, functional trait and 15 competitive responses of a range of species with contrasting invasive status to elevated 16 [CO<sub>2</sub>] and varied nutrient conditions. In most cases, the results showed that elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] 17 and nutrient enrichment promoted plant growth either independently or in interaction with 18 each other, and did not mediate competition between the tested species. Furthermore, the 19 growth effects were species-specific and not strongly linked to the invasive status of the 20 species. It can therefore be concluded that exotic freshwater plant species are an important 21 component of Australian freshwater systems and their response to global environmental 22 change is largely species-specific. In addition, based on the number of species that showed 23 increased growth under nutrient enrichment, it is likely that it will have a more profound 24 direct effect on the freshwater systems than elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>].

25

iii

Certificate

#### CERTIFICATE

This thesis is an original contribution that has not been submitted, in any form, for a degree or diploma in any other university or institution.

Transportation, cultivation and disposal of *Egeria densa* and *Salvinia molesta* for the purpose of this thesis were conducted under New South Wales *Noxious Weeds Act 1993* permit number OUT16/18152. No other form of approval was required for this work.

The work of others has been used to prepare some aspects of the thesis and the extent of their contribution is clearly outlined below. Rachael Gallagher (Macquarie University) provided an initial list of freshwater plant species used in the work described in *Chapter 2*. Anthony Manea (Macquarie University) assisted with running the glasshouse experiment which is presented in *Chapter 3*. All other aspects of the work presented in this thesis were done by me.

Guyo Duba Gufu 7<sup>th</sup> December 2018

Acknowledgements

#### ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

First and foremost, I would like to thank my supervisor, Distinguished Professor Michelle Leishman. You have always been on hand to provide your expert advice and created an enabling environment for my ideas to grow. You are the best supervisor any research student could hope for. I cannot thank you enough for giving me a shot.

I am greatly indebted to my associate supervisor, Dr. Anthony Manea for spending so many hours assisting me in those glasshouses and inordinate amount of time reading those manuscripts. Thank you very much for your support.

A special thanks to members of the Plant Invasion and Restoration Ecology lab (Alex, Anthony (again), Ina, James, Katie, Laura, Samiya and Wendy), for your company, friendship and feedback that have made this journey worthwhile. In the same strand, a big thank you to Brian, Rachael, and Rene. I also most sincerely thank Prof. Hendrik Poorter for the valuable comments on my data chapters.

I am thankful to Sydney Water, in particular Louisa Vorreiter and her staff, for the funds and equipment that made my experiments possible. I would also like to thank Muhammad Masood for assistance with glasshouse operations, Grant Hose for assistance with equipment, and Paul Marynissen (Wyong Council) for plant propagules.

A special thanks to my friends John, Sarr, Hussein, Joseph, and many others for your support through this journey that started a long time ago with your encouragement.

To Mum, Dad, and the rest of the family members, thank you for your inspiration. Zeinab, Wario and Liban, thank you for your endless support and for enduring long periods of not having me in your lives as I pursued this dream. You are the reason I am the person that I am.

V

Acknowledgements

I am grateful to Macquarie University for the scholarship (iMQRES) without which I would not have been able to begin this journey.

Finally, I would like thank the tea growers of the world for toiling those fields and ensuring that I had my cuppa and stayed mentally engaged. I wish your work was appreciated more.

## **CHAPTER ONE**

## 1 Background

2	Freshwater ecosystems are experiencing significant biodiversity declines due to a
3	number of interacting human-mediated threats such as pollution, overexploitation, flow
4	modification, habitat degradation and invasive exotic species (Dudgeon et al., 2006).
5	These ecosystems are among the most threatened ecosystems since human-mediated
6	threats are often more severe than in the most degraded terrestrial ecosystems (Sala et al.,
7	2000; Saunders, Meeuwig & Vincent, 2002). Despite being extremely species-rich and
8	highly threatened (Abell et al., 2008), freshwater ecosystems remain relatively less studied
9	with regards to global environmental change compared to the terrestrial or marine
10	ecosystems (Brundu, 2015).
11	An important threat to native biodiversity in freshwater systems is the widespread
12	introduction of exotic species usually for ornamental or agricultural purposes (Ricciardi &
13	Kipp, 2008; Hulme, 2009; Keller et al., 2011). In spite of strengthened pre-border
14	biosecurity measures (Weber, Sun & Li, 2008; Dodd et al., 2016), the introduction of
15	exotic plant species is still ongoing as a result of the intensive online plant trade (Kay &
16	Hoyle, 2001) which can inadvertently introduce exotic species as contaminants. For
17	example, 10% of ornamental freshwater plant species ordered by Maki and Galatowitsch
18	(2004) in Minnesota, United States were contaminated with propagules of exotic plants
19	including the highly invasive Salvinia molesta. Occasionally, some contaminants prove
20	attractive and easy to grow and may therefore be traded, as was the case with S. molesta in
21	Texas, United States for several years (Kay & Hoyle, 2001). Salvinia molesta has since
22	become invasive in many freshwater systems across twelve states of the United States
23	(Tipping <i>et al.</i> , 2008).

24	A general paradigm in plant invasion ecology is that only a small proportion of
25	introduced species (~10%) escape cultivation to form reproducing wild populations
26	(Williamson & Fitter, 1996). The majority of these exotic species remain restricted to a
27	few localities and do not exert a negative influence on native biodiversity and are referred
28	to as naturalised species (Richardson et al., 2000). However, approximately 10% of
29	naturalised species spread widely across the landscape and exert a negative influence on
30	local biodiversity (Williamson & Fitter, 1996). This group of exotic species are referred to
31	as invasive and are considered a major threat to native biodiversity and ecosystem function
32	(Richardson et al., 2000). For example, 56% of threatened Australian vascular plant
33	species are estimated to be under threat from invasive exotic plant species (Evans et al.,
34	2011). A comprehensive inventory of all naturalised and invasive plant species in
35	Australia has been established (Randall, 2007). However, a compilation and analysis of
36	the geographical distribution of the exotic freshwater plant species will be a useful step in
37	developing monitoring and management strategies.

38 There is increasing interest in the effect that ongoing global environmental change 39 may have on the establishment and spread of exotic species. For example, climate change 40 may break some of the ecological barriers that have constrained the spread of naturalised 41 species, allowing more of them to become invasive while simultaneously exacerbating the 42 impacts and spread of the already invasive species (Groves, 2006; Scott et al., 2008; 43 Duursma et al., 2013; Sorte et al., 2013; Leishman & Gallagher, 2015). When this 44 occurs, the highly interconnected nature and dynamic disturbance regimes of freshwater 45 systems may further facilitate their spread through the landscape (Dudgeon et al., 2006).

46 Perhaps the most prevalent global change environmental factor that impacts
47 freshwater ecosystems by facilitating exotic species invasions is the release of nutrients
48 from anthropogenic sources into water bodies (Sand-Jensen *et al.*, 2000; James *et al.*,

49 2005; Wersal & Madsen, 2011). Many previous studies have shown that invasive 50 freshwater plant species tend to have a stronger response to increased nutrient availability 51 than their native counterparts (Van, Wheeler & Center, 1999; Hastwell, Daniel & Vivian-52 Smith, 2008; Hussner, 2009; Liu et al., 2010; Fan et al., 2013). Under eutrophic (high 53 nutrient) conditions some invasive exotic species may partially or wholly displace native 54 species from habitats because of their superior competitive ability, resulting in altered community structure (Njambuya, Stiers & Triest, 2011; Gérard, Brion & Triest, 2014; 55 56 Ceschin et al., 2018). Consequently, most studies of freshwater plant responses to altered 57 nutrient status have focused on high levels of nutrient additions (e.g. Cary & Weerts, 58 1983; Al-Hamdani & Sirna, 2008; Yu et al., 2015) and relatively less is known about 59 plant responses to small increases in nutrient levels in oligotrophic (nutrient-poor) 60 systems. The few studies that have examined this have shown that invasive species may 61 also have greater growth rates in low nutrient habitats, possibly due to their high resource 62 use efficiency (Funk & Vitousek, 2007). For example, the invasive Hydrilla verticillata (water thyme) had faster growth rates than the confamilial native Vallisneria americana 63 (American eelgrass) at low nutrient concentrations of 0.2 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup> (Kennedy, Horth 64 & Carr, 2009). 65

66 Another global change environmental factor that could favour the invasion of 67 exotic species in freshwater systems is the rising concentration of atmospheric carbon 68 dioxide ([CO<sub>2</sub>]). It has led to many climate-related changes that affect the physiological 69 performance, phenology, and distributions of many species globally (Walther et al., 2002; 70 Parmesan & Yohe, 2003). In plants, elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] directly affects performance through 71 higher photosynthetic rates, improved water and nitrogen use efficiency, and altered 72 functional traits (Poorter & Navas, 2003; Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007; Leakey et al., 73 2009). As a result of these changes, plants often experience an increase in growth under

74	elevated [CO2] (Poorter & Navas, 2003; Ainsworth & Long, 2005; Stiling & Cornelissen,
75	2007; Wang et al., 2012). However, the degree of species responsiveness to elevated
76	[CO <sub>2</sub> ] may depend on various factors including the invasive status of the species.
77	Evidence from terrestrial systems suggests that invasive exotic species tend to be more
78	responsive to CO <sub>2</sub> enrichment than their native counterparts (Dukes & Mooney, 1999; Liu
79	et al., 2017). Although less studied than terrestrial systems, similar trends have been
80	reported for freshwater systems. For example, in an open-top chamber CO <sub>2</sub> enrichment
81	experiment the invasive exotic wetland species Typha angustifolia (narrow-leaved cattail)
82	was found to have a stronger growth response compared to the congeneric native species,
83	T. latifolia (broadleaf cattail) (Sullivan et al., 2010).
84	Species of different functional groups have also shown differential growth
85	responses under elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] (Kimball, 1983; Robinson, Ryan & Newman, 2012). For
86	example, terrestrial C3 and nitrogen-fixing (N-fixing) species tend to respond more
87	strongly to $CO_2$ enrichment compared to their $C_4$ and crassulacean acid metabolism
88	(CAM) counterparts (Poorter, 1993; Wang et al., 2012). In C <sub>3</sub> plants, rubisco, the enzyme
89	responsible for photosynthetic carbon fixation also catalyses oxygenation of ribulose-1,5-
90	bisphosphate (the main substrate for photosynthesis), thereby initiating photorespiration. It
91	is estimated that at 25°C, approximately 23% of carbon fixed by photosynthesis is lost due
92	to photorespiration (Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007). Consequently, C3 plants are carbon
93	limited under the current [CO <sub>2</sub> ] and would likely be more responsive to elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ]. In
94	contrast, the light-dependent reactions and carbon fixation are separated spatially and
95	temporally in $C_4$ and CAM species respectively, thereby minimising the likelihood of
96	photorespiration. These plants are therefore less carbon limited under the current
97	conditions and are therefore expected to be less responsive to elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ]. The N-
98	fixing species on the other hand, represent a large carbon sink due to the presence of the

symbiont and are thus more responsive to elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] (Poorter, 1993; Wang *et al.*,
2012).

101 In freshwater systems, it is possible that differences in growth form may also 102 influence species responsiveness to both  $CO_2$  and nutrient enrichment. For example, the 103 emergent and free-floating species utilise atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> via the C<sub>3</sub> pathway (Bowes, 104 1993) and are therefore expected to be more responsive to  $CO_2$  and nutrient enrichment. 105 On the other hand, most submerged species are adapted CO<sub>2</sub> limitation occasioned by 106 diffusive resistance of atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> in water and the large boundary layer by being 107 facultative CO<sub>2</sub> users (Maberly & Madsen, 2002; Hasler et al., 2016). They would thus be 108 less responsive to  $CO_2$  enrichment as long as the  $HCO_3^-$  is available (Hasler *et al.*, 2016). 109 In addition, nutrient enrichment would promote increased algal growth resulting in light 110 attenuation that would greatly limit, and even cause disappearance of the submerged 111 species (Scheffer et al., 1993). Therefore, responsiveness of freshwater species to CO<sub>2</sub> and 112 nutrient enrichment would depend on the invasive status of the species, their physiological 113 functional groups, and their growth form.

114 Species responsiveness to elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] is dependent on nutrient supply not being 115 limited (Poorter & Navas, 2003; Ainsworth & Long, 2005). For example, the 116 responsiveness of water hyacinth, *Eichhornia crassipes* (an invasive exotic freshwater 117 species) growth under  $CO_2$  enrichment has been shown to be more pronounced in 118 eutrophic conditions compared to oligotrophic conditions (Liu et al., 2010). It has been 119 suggested that rising atmospheric [CO<sub>2</sub>] could interact with other global change 120 environmental factors such as nutrient enrichment to promote exotic plant invasions via 121 changes in competitive outcomes (Leishman & Gallagher, 2015). This could have a major 122 effect on the ecosystem since the dominance of invasive exotic plant species in freshwater 123 communities is often attributed to their superior competitive abilities (Barrat-Segretain &

124 Elger, 2004). The shift in competitive dominance between native and invasive exotics in 125 response to elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] has been demonstrated for various terrestrial plant species 126 (Poorter & Navas, 2003; Hely & Roxburgh, 2005; Manea & Leishman, 2011; Liu et al., 127 2017). In contrast, our understanding for aquatic species and in particular freshwater 128 species is much more rudimentary. 129 Although Australia is generally considered a dry continent (Smith & Morton, 130 1990), freshwater bodies, mostly wetlands, occur throughout the country (Catford *et al.*, 131 2017). These include small alpine bogs and fens, artificial reservoirs and farm dams,

132 extensive floodplains of northern and central Australia, coastal wetlands, and large river

133 systems (Finlayson, 2005; Catford et al., 2017). These aquatic systems provide habitat to

134 many native plant and animal species with the dominant plant species ranging from *Oryza* 

135 spp., *Eleocharis* spp., *Hymenachne acutigluma*, and *Pseudoraphis spinescens* in the

136 floodplains (Finlayson, 2005), to hydrophytes such as Azolla spp., Lemna spp., Hydrilla

137 verticillata, Ceratophyllum demersum, Nymphoides indica, and Potamogeton spp. in

deeper permanent water bodies (Catford *et al.*, 2017). Despite being species-rich and of

139 high conservation value, these freshwater systems are currently among Australia's 10 most

140 vulnerable habitats due to land development, mining, altered hydrology, eutrophication,

141 exotic species invasions and climate change (Laurance *et al.*, 2011). Impacts of altered

142 hydrological regimes on wetland biodiversity have been extensively reviewed (Kingsford,

143 2000; Bunn & Arthington, 2002). However, there is need for more research to develop

144 better understanding of how eutrophication, invasive exotic species and climate change

145 might interact to alter the structure and functions of these freshwater systems.

146

147

148

#### 149 Thesis scope and structure

150 While many studies have compared native and invasive exotic species responses to 151 global environmental change factors in terrestrial systems (e.g. Dukes & Mooney, 1999; 152 Hely & Roxburgh, 2005; Manea & Leishman, 2011; Liu et al., 2017), similar studies in 153 freshwater systems are scarce. The main aim of this thesis was to investigate growth, 154 reproduction, functional trait and competitive responses of native, naturalised and invasive 155 freshwater plant species to different concentrations of  $CO_2$  and nutrients. More 156 specifically, the following questions were addressed in the five data chapters that 157 constitute this thesis: (i) what is the current status of the exotic freshwater plant species in 158 Australia? (ii) do invasive exotic and native freshwater plant species respond similarly to 159 low additional nitrate doses? (iii) what are the effects of elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] on the growth, 160 reproduction and functional trait responses of freshwater plant species? (iv) do the growth 161 and biomass allocation responses of invasive and naturalised emergent freshwater 162 ornamental species to elevated  $[CO_2]$  and nutrient enrichment differ? (v) are interactions 163 between the native (i.e. Azolla filiculoides) and exotic (i.e. Salvinia molesta) species 164 mediated by elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient enrichment? Although each data chapter was 165 formatted for submission to different journals, they have been reformatted in a consistent 166 style for this thesis. However, since each data chapter was prepared as a stand-alone 167 manuscript, there is some inevitable repetition, particularly in regards to the Introduction 168 and Methods sections.

169 Chapter 2 of this thesis is a systematic analysis of the current status of the exotic
170 freshwater plant species in Australia. This analysis identified the exotic species which
171 currently are a part of the Australian flora and described their origin, current distribution in
172 Australia, introduction pathways and reproduction and dispersal mechanisms. This chapter
173 has been published in *Cunninghamia*. The remaining data chapters are all manipulative

174	glasshouse experiments investigating freshwater plant species responses to global change
175	environmental factors. Chapter 3 compared the growth responses of two invasive exotic
176	(Egeria densa, Salvinia molesta) and a native (Vallisneria spiralis) freshwater plant
177	species to low levels of N enrichment. This chapter has been published in Aquatic Botany.
178	Chapter 4 investigated the growth, reproduction and functional trait responses of two free-
179	floating ferns (Azolla filiculoides - native, S. molesta - invasive), and a submerged native
180	angiosperm (V. spiralis) to elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ]. This chapter has been published in Aquatic
181	Botany. Chapter 5 compared the growth and biomass allocation responses of two invasive
182	(Mentha pulegium and Zantedeschia aethiopica) and three naturalised (Ludwigia palustris,
183	Mentha aquatica and Rorippa nasturtium-aquaticum) ornamental species to elevated
184	[CO <sub>2</sub> ] and nutrient enrichment. This chapter has been prepared for publication in
185	Hydrobiologia. The final data chapter (Chapter 6), assessed whether interactions between
186	the native A. filiculoides and the invasive S. molesta were mediated by elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ]
187	and/or nutrient enrichment. This chapter has been submitted to Aquatic Sciences. Finally,
188	Chapter 7 is the general discussion where the findings of the thesis are consolidated and
189	discussed in a broader context of literature on plant responses to global environmental
190	change.
101	

191

#### 192 **References**

193	Abell R.,	Thieme M.L.	, Revenga	C., Bryer	M., Kottel	at M., Boguts	kaya N.,	Coad E	3.,
-----	-----------	-------------	-----------	-----------	------------	---------------	----------	--------	-----

- Mandrak N., Balderas S.C. & Bussing W. (2008) Freshwater ecoregions of the
  world: A new map of biogeographic units for freshwater biodiversity conservation. *BioScience*, 58, 403-414.
- Ainsworth E.A. & Long S.P. (2005) What have we learned from 15 years of free-air CO<sub>2</sub>
  enrichment (FACE)? A meta-analytic review of the responses of photosynthesis,

199	canopy properties and plant production to rising CO <sub>2</sub> . New Phytologist, 165, 351-
200	372.
201	Ainsworth E.A. & Rogers A. (2007) The response of photosynthesis and stomatal
202	conductance to rising [CO <sub>2</sub> ]: mechanisms and environmental interactions. <i>Plant</i> ,
203	Cell & Environment, <b>30</b> , 258-270.
204	Al-Hamdani S.H. & Sirna C.B. (2008) Physiological responses of Salvinia minima to
205	different phosphorus and nitrogen concentrations. American Fern Journal, 98, 71-
206	82.
207	Barrat-Segretain M.H. & Elger A. (2004) Experiments on growth interactions between

- 208 two invasive macrophyte species. *Journal of Vegetation Science*, **15**, 109-114.
- Bowes G. (1993) Facing the inevitable: Plants and increasing atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub>. *Annual Review of Plant Biology*, 44, 309-332.
- Brundu G. (2015) Plant invaders in European and Mediterranean inland waters: Profiles,
  distribution, and threats. *Hydrobiologia*, **746**, 61-79.
- Bunn S.E. & Arthington A.H. (2002) Basic Principles and Ecological Consequences of
  Altered Flow Regimes for Aquatic Biodiversity. *Environmental Management*, 30,
  492-507.
- 216 Cary P.R. & Weerts P.G.J. (1983) Growth of Salvinia molesta as affected by water
- temperature and nutrition I. Effects of nitrogen level and nitrogen compounds. *Aquatic Botany*, 16, 163-172.
- 219 Catford J.A., Roberts J., Capon S.J., Froend R.H., Windecker S.M. & Douglas M.M.
- 220 (2017) Wetland vegetation of inland Australia. In: Australian Vegetation (Ed D.A.
- 221 Keith), pp. 490-515. Cambridge University Press.
- 222 Ceschin S., Abati S., Leacche I. & Zuccarello V. (2018) Ecological comparison between
  223 duckweeds in central Italy: The invasive *Lemna minuta* vs the native *L. minor*.

224 Plant Biosystems - An International Journal Dealing with all Aspects of Plant 225 Biology, 152, 674-683. 226 Dodd A.J., Mccarthy M.A., Ainsworth N. & Burgman M.A. (2016) Identifying hotspots of 227 alien plant naturalisation in Australia: Approaches and predictions. *Biological* 228 Invasions, 18, 631-645. 229 Dudgeon D., Arthington A.H., Gessner M.O., Kawabata Z.-I., Knowler D.J., Lévêque C., 230 Naiman R.J., Prieur-Richard A.-H., Soto D. & Stiassny M.L. (2006) Freshwater 231 biodiversity: Importance, threats, status and conservation challenges. *Biological* 232 *Reviews*, **81**, 163-182. 233 Dukes J.S. & Mooney H.A. (1999) Does global change increase the success of biological 234 invaders? Trends in Ecology & Evolution, 14, 135-139. 235 Duursma D.E., Gallagher R.V., Roger E., Hughes L., Downey P.O. & Leishman M.R. 236 (2013) Next-generation invaders? Hotspots for naturalised sleeper weeds in 237 Australia under future climates. Plos One, 8, e84222. 238 Evans M.C., Watson J.E.M., Fuller R.A., Venter O., Bennett S.C., Marsack P.R. & 239 Possingham H.P. (2011) The spatial distribution of threats to species in Australia. 240 *BioScience*, **61**, 281-289. 241 Fan S., Liu C., Yu D. & Xie D. (2013) Differences in leaf nitrogen content, 242 photosynthesis, and resource-use efficiency between Eichhornia crassipes and a 243 native plant *Monochoria vaginalis* in response to altered sediment nutrient levels. 244 Hydrobiologia, **711**, 129-137. 245 Finlayson C.M. (2005) Plant ecology of Australia's tropical floodplain wetlands: a review. Annals of Botany, 96, 541-555. 246 247 Funk J.L. & Vitousek P.M. (2007) Resource-use efficiency and plant invasion in low-248 resource systems. *Nature*, **446**, 1079-1081.

- 249 Gérard J., Brion N. & Triest L. (2014) Effect of water column phosphorus reduction on
- competitive outcome and traits of *Ludwigia grandiflora* and *L. peploides*, invasive
  species in Europe. *Aquatic Invasions*, 9, 157-166.
- Groves R. (2006) Are some weeds sleeping? Some concepts and reasons. *Euphytica*, 148, 111-120.
- Hasler C.T., Butman D., Jeffrey J.D. & Suski C.D. (2016) Freshwater biota and rising
   pCO2? *Ecology Letters*, **19**, 98-108.
- 256 Hastwell G.T., Daniel A.J. & Vivian-Smith G. (2008) Predicting invasiveness in exotic
- 257 species: do subtropical native and invasive exotic aquatic plants differ in their
- growth responses to macronutrients? *Diversity and Distributions*, **14**, 243-251.
- 259 Hely S.E.L. & Roxburgh S.H. (2005) The interactive effects of elevated CO<sub>2</sub>, temperature
- and initial size on growth and competition between a native C<sub>3</sub> and an invasive C<sub>3</sub>
  grass. *Plant Ecology*, **177**, 85-98.
- Hulme P.E. (2009) Trade, transport and trouble: managing invasive species pathways in an
  era of globalization. *Journal of Applied Ecology*, 46, 10-18.
- Hussner A. (2009) Growth and photosynthesis of four invasive aquatic plant species in
  Europe. *Weed Research*, 49, 506-515.
- James C., Fisher J., Russell V., Collings S. & Moss B. (2005) Nitrate availability and
- 267 hydrophyte species richness in shallow lakes. *Freshwater Biology*, **50**, 1049-1063.
- 268 Kay S.H. & Hoyle S.T. (2001) Mail order, the internet, and invasive aquatic weeds.
- *Journal of Aquatic Plant Management*, **39**, 88-91.
- 270 Keller R.P., Geist J., Jeschke J.M. & Kühn I. (2011) Invasive species in Europe: Ecology,
- status, and policy. *Environmental Sciences Europe*, **23**, 23.

- 272 Kennedy T.L., Horth L.A. & Carr D.E. (2009) The effects of nitrate loading on the
- invasive macrophyte *Hydrilla verticillata* and two common, native macrophytes in
  Florida. *Aquatic Botany*, **91**, 253-256.
- Kimball B.A. (1983) Carbon dioxide and agricultural yield: An assemblage and analysis
  of 430 prior observations 1. *Agronomy Journal*, **75**, 779-788.
- 277 Kingsford R.T. (2000) Ecological impacts of dams, water diversions and river
- 278 management on floodplain wetlands in Australia. *Austral Ecology*, **25**, 109-127.
- 279 Laurance W.F., Dell B., Turton S.M., Lawes M.J., Hutley L.B., Mccallum H., Dale P.,
- 280 Bird M., Hardy G., Prideaux G., Gawne B., Mcmahon C.R., Yu R., Hero J.-M.,
- 281 Schwarzkopf L., Krockenberger A., Douglas M., Silvester E., Mahony M., Vella
- 282 K., Saikia U., Wahren C.-H., Xu Z., Smith B. & Cocklin C. (2011) The 10
- Australian ecosystems most vulnerable to tipping points. *Biological Conservation*,
  144, 1472-1480.
- Leakey A.D., Ainsworth E.A., Bernacchi C.J., Rogers A., Long S.P. & Ort D.R. (2009)
- Elevated CO<sub>2</sub> effects on plant carbon, nitrogen, and water relations: Six important
  lessons from FACE. *Journal of Experimental Botany*, **60**, 2859-2876.
- 288 Leishman M.R. & Gallagher R.V. (2015) Will there be a shift to alien-dominated
- vegetation assemblages under climate change? *Diversity and Distributions*, 21,
  848-852.
- Liu J.-Z., Ge Y.-M., Zhou Y.-F. & Tian G.-M. (2010) Effects of elevated CO<sub>2</sub> on growth
  and nutrient uptake of *Eichhornia crassipes* under four different nutrient levels. *Water, Air, & Soil Pollution,* 212, 387-394.
- Liu Y., Oduor A.M.O., Zhang Z., Manea A., Tooth I.M., Leishman M.R., Xu X. &
- 295 Kleunen M. (2017) Do invasive alien plants benefit more from global
- environmental change than native plants? *Global Change Biology*, **23**, 3363-3370.

297	Maberly S.C. & Madsen T.V. (2002) Freshwater angiosperm carbon concentrating
298	mechanisms: processes and patterns. Functional Plant Biology, 29, 393-405.
299	Maki K. & Galatowitsch S. (2004) Movement of invasive aquatic plants into Minnesota
300	(USA) through horticultural trade. Biological Conservation, 118, 389-396.
301	Manea A. & Leishman M.R. (2011) Competitive interactions between native and invasive
302	exotic plant species are altered under elevated carbon dioxide. Oecologia, 165,
303	735-744.
304	Njambuya J., Stiers I. & Triest L. (2011) Competition between Lemna minuta and Lemna
305	minor at different nutrient concentrations. Aquatic Botany, 94, 158-164.
306	Parmesan C. & Yohe G. (2003) A globally coherent fingerprint of climate change impacts
307	across natural systems. Nature, 421, 37.
308	Poorter H. (1993) Interspecific variation in the growth response of plants to an elevated
309	ambient CO <sub>2</sub> concentration. <i>Vegetatio</i> , <b>104</b> , 77-97.
310	Poorter H. & Navas M.L. (2003) Plant growth and competition at elevated CO <sub>2</sub> : On
311	winners, losers and functional groups. New Phytologist, 157, 175-198.
312	Randall R.P. (2007) The introduced flora of Australia and its weed status, CRC for
313	Australian Weed Management Adelaide.
314	Ricciardi A. & Kipp R. (2008) Predicting the number of ecologically harmful exotic
315	species in an aquatic system. Diversity and Distributions, 14, 374-380.
316	Richardson D.M., Pyšek P., Rejmanek M., Barbour M.G., Panetta F.D. & West C.J.
317	(2000) Naturalization and invasion of alien plants: Concepts and definitions.
318	Diversity and Distributions, 6, 93-107.
319	Robinson E.A., Ryan G.D. & Newman J.A. (2012) A meta-analytical review of the effects
320	of elevated CO <sub>2</sub> on plant–arthropod interactions highlights the importance of
321	interacting environmental and biological variables. New Phytologist, 194, 321-336.

322	Sala O.E., Stuart Chapin F., Iii, Armesto J.J., Berlow E., Bloomfield J., Dirzo R., Huber-
323	Sanwald E., Huenneke L.F., Jackson R.B., Kinzig A., Leemans R., Lodge D.M.,
324	Mooney H.A., Oesterheld M.N., Poff N.L., Sykes M.T., Walker B.H., Walker M.
325	& Wall D.H. (2000) Global Biodiversity Scenarios for the Year 2100. Science,
326	<b>287,</b> 1770-1774.
327	Sand-Jensen K., Riis T., Vestergaard O. & Larsen S.E. (2000) Macrophyte decline in
328	Danish lakes and streams over the past 100 years. Journal of Ecology, 88, 1030-
329	1040.
330	Saunders D.L., Meeuwig J.J. & Vincent A.C.J. (2002) Freshwater Protected Areas:
331	Strategies for Conservation. Conservation Biology, 16, 30-41.
332	Scheffer, M., Hosper, S. H., Meijer, M. L., Moss, B., & Jeppesen, E. (1993). Alternative
333	equilibria in shallow lakes. Trends in ecology & evolution, 8, 275-279.
334	Scott J.K., Batchelor K.L., Ota N. & Yeoh P.B. Modelling climate change impacts on
335	sleeper and alert weeds. In: Proceedings of the 16th Australian Weeds Conference,
336	Cairns Convention Centre, North Queensland, Australia, 18-22 May, 2008, pp.
337	143-1452008. Queensland Weed Society.
338	Smith D.M.S. & Morton S.R. (1990) A framework for the ecology of arid Australia.
339	Journal of Arid Environments, 18, 255-278.
340	Sorte C.J., Ibáñez I., Blumenthal D.M., Molinari N.A., Miller L.P., Grosholz E.D., Diez
341	J.M., D'antonio C.M., Olden J.D. & Jones S.J. (2013) Poised to prosper? A cross-
342	system comparison of climate change effects on native and non-native species
343	performance. Ecology Letters, 16, 261-270.
344	Stiling P. & Cornelissen T. (2007) How does elevated carbon dioxide (CO <sub>2</sub> ) affect plant-
345	herbivore interactions? A field experiment and meta-analysis of CO2-mediated

346	changes on plant chemistry and herbivore performance. Global Change Biology,
347	<b>13,</b> 1823-1842.
348	Sullivan L., Wildova R., Goldberg D. & Vogel C. (2010) Growth of three cattail (Typha)
349	taxa in response to elevated CO <sub>2</sub> . <i>Plant Ecology</i> , <b>207</b> , 121-129.
350	Tipping P.W., Martin M.R., Center T.D. & Davern T.M. (2008) Suppression of Salvinia
351	molesta Mitchell in Texas and Louisiana by Cyrtobagous salviniae Calder and
352	Sands. Aquatic Botany, 88, 196-202.
353	Van T.K., Wheeler G.S. & Center T.D. (1999) Competition between Hydrilla verticillata
354	and Vallisneria americana as influenced by soil fertility. Aquatic Botany, 62, 225-
355	233.
356	Walther GR., Post E., Convey P., Menzel A., Parmesan C., Beebee T.J., Fromentin J
357	M., Hoegh-Guldberg O. & Bairlein F. (2002) Ecological responses to recent
358	climate change. Nature, 416, 389.
359	Wang D., Heckathorn S.A., Wang X. & Philpott S.M. (2012) A meta-analysis of plant
360	physiological and growth responses to temperature and elevated CO <sub>2</sub> . Oecologia,
361	<b>169,</b> 1-13.
362	Weber E., Sun SG. & Li B. (2008) Invasive alien plants in China: Diversity and
363	ecological insights. Biological Invasions, 10, 1411-1429.
364	Wersal R.M. & Madsen J.D. (2011) Influences of water column nutrient loading on
365	growth characteristics of the invasive aquatic macrophyte Myriophyllum
366	aquaticum (Vell.) Verdc. Hydrobiologia, 665, 93-105.
367	Williamson M.H. & Fitter A. (1996) The characters of successful invaders. Biological
368	Conservation, <b>78</b> , 163-170.

- 369 Yu Q., Wang H.Z., Li Y., Shao J.C., Liang X.M., Jeppesen E. & Wang H.J. (2015) Effects
- of high nitrogen concentrations on the growth of submersed macrophytes at
- 371 moderate phosphorus concentrations. *Water Research*, **83**, 385-395.

## **CHAPTER TWO**

The current status of exotic freshwater vascular plants in Australia - a

systematic description.

Published as 'Gufu, G.D. & Leishman, M.R. (2018) The current status of exotic freshwater vascular plants in Australia - a systematic description. *Cunninghamia*, **18**, 123-133.'

My contribution to the research and paper: Concept – 90%; Data collection – 90%; Analysis – 100%; Writing – 90%.

#### 1 Abstract

2 Freshwater systems are considered particularly vulnerable to human impact, 3 through habitat modification, changes to water regimes and quality, invasion by exotic 4 species and climate change. One major threat to native biodiversity in freshwater systems 5 is the widespread introduction of exotic plant species, some of which have become 6 naturalised or invasive in their introduced range. Using various records, we conducted a 7 descriptive analysis of the naturalised freshwater plant species in Australia. There are 63 8 freshwater plant species belonging to 45 genera and 26 families naturalised in Australia 9 with the dominant families being Cyperaceae, Poaceae and Plantaginaceae. More than 10 40% of these species are categorised as either invasive or declared weeds, the majority of 11 which are perennial species that grow on the margins of wetlands. They originated from 12 all the inhabited continents with most of the species being native to Europe, South 13 America and North America. The greatest number of the species are currently found in 14 New South Wales (90%), Queensland (68%) and Victoria (65%) and ornamental aquarium 15 plant trade was identified as the main pathway of their introduction. Most of the species 16 are clonal plants with flexible modes of reproduction and multiple dispersal vectors. We 17 conclude that exotic plant species are now an important component of Australia's 18 freshwater systems and that ongoing monitoring of their status, distribution and impact 19 should be a high priority in light of the increasing influence of anthropogenic factors 20 including climate change. 21

22 Key words: aquatic ecosystem; flora; invasive; native; naturalised; ornamental

23

24

#### 25 Introduction

26 Freshwater ecosystems are estimated to cover about 3% of the Earth's land surface 27 area (Downing et al., 2006) but they provide habitat to a disproportionately high number 28 of specialised plant and animal species (Balian et al., 2008). Globally, these ecosystems 29 are experiencing severe declines in biodiversity due to a mix of human-mediated threats 30 such as pollution, overexploitation, flow modification, habitat degradation and invasive 31 species (Dudgeon et al., 2006). These declines in many cases are more pronounced 32 compared to terrestrial ecosystems (Sala et al., 2000), thus it has been argued that 33 freshwater ecosystems are the most threatened of global ecosystems (Saunders, Meeuwig 34 & Vincent, 2002; Dudgeon *et al.*, 2006). Despite freshwater ecosystems being extremely 35 species-rich and harbouring many threatened species (Abell et al., 2008), they do not 36 receive the same conservation efforts and research attention as terrestrial ecosystems 37 (Brundu, 2015). For example, there is comparatively little information on freshwater 38 plants, insects, molluscs and crustaceans in most parts of the world (Revenga et al., 2005). 39 This may be due to the difficulty of monitoring freshwater ecosystems (Brundu, 2015)

40 One of the most significant threats to freshwater ecosystems is the widespread 41 introduction of exotic plant species into new areas as a result of increased international 42 human travel and trade (Mack et al., 2000). Most of these species are introduced 43 deliberately for ornamental or agricultural purposes whereas others passively find their 44 way to new regions as contaminants of ballast water or as hitchhikers on other species 45 (Champion, Clayton & Hofstra, 2010). Although strengthened pre-border biosecurity 46 measures have slowed down the rate of species introductions, the process is still ongoing 47 (Weber, Sun & Li, 2008; Dodd *et al.*, 2016) and it is inevitable that a proportion of these 48 introduced species will become naturalised or even a problematic invader.

49 Naturalised non-invasive species are those that establish self-perpetuating 50 populations in the wild without having profound negative effects on the ecosystem 51 (Richardson et al., 2000). With time, it is estimated that approximately 10% of naturalised 52 species overcome reproductive and dispersal barriers, and become invasive (Williamson & Fitter, 1996; Williams & West, 2000). In future this proportion may increase in some 53 54 regions as the ongoing global climatic and environmental change may provide ecological 55 opportunities for some of these species to become invasive (Groves, 2006; Scott et al., 56 2008; Duursma et al., 2013; Sorte et al., 2013; Leishman & Gallagher, 2015). When this 57 occurs, the highly connected nature and dynamic disturbance regimes of freshwater 58 ecosystems would further facilitate the spread of these species through the landscape 59 (Dudgeon et al., 2006).

60 Similar to their terrestrial counterparts, invasive exotic freshwater plant species can 61 exert dramatic negative impacts on native communities and ecosystems (Evangelista, 62 Thomaz & Umetsu, 2014). For example, a more than 50% decline in species richness of 63 co-occurring native freshwater plant species was observed with increasing abundance of the invasive exotic Alternanthera philoxeroides (alligator weed) in natural ponds 64 65 (Chatterjee & Dewanji, 2014), and *Myriophyllum spicatum* (parrot's feather) in Lake George, New York, USA (Boylen, Eichler & Madsen, 1999). Furthermore, this 66 67 suppression of native plant communities by exotic plant species may modify trophic 68 interactions (Richardson & van Wilgen, 2004) by simplifying and rendering the native 69 plant communities a poorer food source for herbivores and higher trophic level consumers 70 (Havel et al., 2015). Thus, exotic plant invasions can have detrimental ecosystem-level 71 effects on freshwater systems (Yarrow et al., 2009).

72	The Australian naturalised flora is considered one of the most species rich in the
73	world (Dodd et al., 2015). Currently, Australia is estimated to have around 2700
74	naturalised plant species, representing 12% of its total flora (Randall, 2007; Dodd et al.,
75	2015). A large effort has been made to establish a comprehensive inventory of the entire
76	naturalised flora (Randall, 2007). In addition, the Australian Virtual Herbarium
77	(http://avh.chah.org.au/) has digitised occurrence records of extant plant species and
78	created a publicly accessible online database (Haque et al., 2017). These records have
79	been useful in assessing patterns of species endemism (Crisp et al., 2001), mapping
80	species threats (Evans et al., 2011), predicting plant invasions (Duursma et al., 2013),
81	analysing drivers responsible for patterns of naturalisation (Dodd et al., 2015), and
82	identifying areas that have high richness of naturalised exotic species (Dodd et al., 2016).
83	However, these outcomes are broad and generalise across different ecosystems. Therefore,
84	it is important for ecosystem-level descriptions of naturalised non-invasive and invasive
85	exotic species to be undertaken so ecosystem-specific monitoring and management
86	practices can be devised. The aim of this study is to provide a systematic description of the
87	distribution, origin and richness of naturalised non-invasive and invasive exotic freshwater
88	plant species in Australia.

89

#### 90 Methods

#### 91 **Compilation of species list**

We searched ISI Web of Knowledge for information on naturalised plant species in
freshwater ecosystems of Australia using the following combinations: (invasi\*) OR
(invader) OR (non-native) OR (exotic) OR (alien) OR (non-indigenous) OR (introduced)
OR ("naturalised species") OR ("naturalized species") OR (biological invasion\*) AND

- 96 (plant) OR (macrophyte\*) AND (freshwater) OR (aquatic) OR (river\*) OR (pond\*) OR
- 97 (lake\*) OR (dam\*) OR ("farm dam") AND (Australia) OR ("New South Wales") OR
- 98 ("NSW") OR (Queensland) OR ("Northern Territory") OR ("NT") OR ("Western
- 99 Australia") OR ("WA") OR ("South Australia") OR ("SA") OR (Victoria) OR (Vic) OR
- 100 (Tasmania) OR ("Australian Capital Territory") OR ("ACT"). In addition, a list of
- 101 naturalised freshwater plant species in Australia was compiled from existing inventories
- 102 and lists (e.g. Aston, 1973; Sainty & Jacobs, 2003; Randall, 2007) and online databases
- 103 (e.g. http://weeds.dpi.nsw.gov.au/; http://plantnet.rbgsyd.nsw.gov.au/;
- 104 https://keyserver.lucidcentral.org/weeds/data/media/Html/index.htm#A;
- 105 https://www.business.qld.gov.au/industries/farms-fishing-forestry/agriculture/land-
- 106 management/health-pests-weeds-diseases/weeds-diseases;
- 107 https://nt.gov.au/environment/weeds/weeds-in-the-nt/A-Z-list-of-weeds-in-the-NT;
- 108 https://florabase.dpaw.wa.gov.au/search/advanced?current=y&alien=y;
- 109 http://www.pir.sa.gov.au/biosecurity/weeds\_and\_pest\_animals/weeds\_in\_sa;
- 110 http://agriculture.vic.gov.au/agriculture/pests-diseases-and-weeds;
- 111 https://dpipwe.tas.gov.au/invasive-species/weeds/weeds-index/declared-weeds-index).
- 112 We categorised plant species as 'freshwater' using the following definition:
- 113 "closely bound to freshwater habitats whose vegetative parts actively grow either
- 114 permanently or periodically (for at least several weeks each year) submerged below,
- 115 floating on, or growing up through the water surface" (Lacoul & Freedman, 2006;
- 116 Chambers *et al.*, 2008; Hussner, 2012).
- Validity of the species names was checked using the Australian Plant Census
  website (https://biodiversity.org.au/nsl/services/APC) and species not found in the census
  or with unresolved nomenclature were excluded. Any species whose status as native or

120 exotic was unclear according to the Australian Plant Census was also excluded from the

121 analysis. We then checked the naturalisation status of each species using a comprehensive

122 data set of the introduced flora of Australia - an updated version of Randall (2007)

123 containing unpublished data, and excluded any that was not naturalised. We also excluded

124 species that are associated more with saline water than fresh water.

#### 125 Plant data collation

126 Data on the native regions of each species, introduction purpose, and their biology 127 (growth habit, longevity and dispersal mechanisms) were compiled from multiple sources 128 including regional floras, published literature and the online databases (e.g. 129 https://www.cabi.org/ISC/search; http://ausgrass2.myspecies.info/content/fact-sheets; 130 https://npgsweb.ars-grin.gov/gringlobal/taxon/taxonomysimple.aspx). Eight broad regions 131 of origin were identified as follows: Europe, North America (including Mexico), Central 132 America (including the Caribbean), South America, Sub-Saharan Africa (including 133 Madagascar), North Africa, temperate Asia (including the Middle East), and southern and 134 south eastern Asia. Multiple sources of origin were assigned where a species had a wide 135 native geographical region. For example, Alisma lanceolatum (narrow-leaved water 136 plantain) is native to Europe, North Africa and temperate Asia and was counted as a 137 species of each of these regions. The current economic uses of the species were used to 138 assign their purpose of introduction (Weber, Sun & Li, 2008) where such information was 139 not explicitly available. We also conducted internet searches to determine if each species 140 is currently available for purchase from aquarium suppliers.

The Australian Virtual Herbarium (http://avh.ala.org.au/) was used to determine
presence or absence of each species in each of the Australian states and territories.
Randall's (2007) list was used to categorise the species as naturalised non-invasive,

	44	invasive, o	or declared weeds.	For the purpose	of this study, a	a declared wee	ed was defined
--	----	-------------	--------------------	-----------------	------------------	----------------	----------------

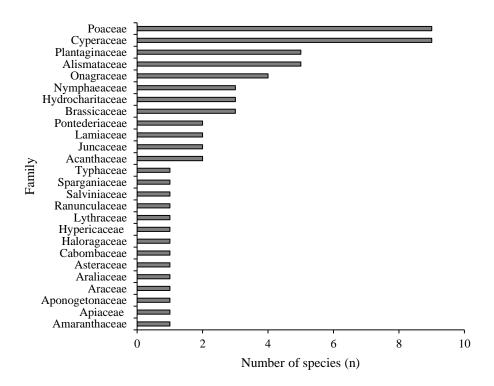
145 a plant species that is considered noxious only in certain Australian states or territories

146 while invasive species are those considered noxious nationally.

**Results** 

#### **Taxonomy and status**

After screening 255 titles returned by the literature search, 42 papers that were studies of freshwater plants were reviewed for collation of the naturalised species list (Appendix 1), in addition to data derived from existing inventories and online data sources. In total, 63 exotic species of freshwater plants belonging to 45 genera and 26 families were identified as naturalised in Australia (Figure 1; Appendix 2). This represents 29% of all the freshwater plant species in Australia. The plant families with the highest number of naturalised species were Poaceae (nine species), Cyperaceae (nine species) and Plantaginaceae (five species). Fourteen of the 26 families were represented by only one species. 



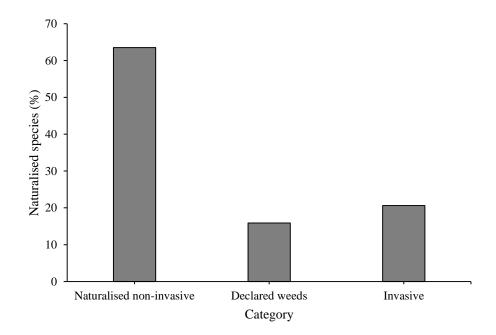


168 Figure 1: Taxonomic diversity (number) of the naturalised freshwater plant species in169 Australia.

170 There were 40 species (63%) that were classified as naturalised non-invasive, 10

171 (16%) declared weeds and 13 species (21%) that were designated as invasive (Figure 2;

- 172 Table 1).



#### 182

**Figure 2:** The percentage of naturalised freshwater plant species in different categories of

184 invasive status

#### 185 Growth habit

The majority of the species (94%) were perennial while three percent were annual
and the remaining three percent have annual stems but perennial rhizomes. Most of the
species were emergent marginal wetland species (59%). The emergent plants that grow
through the water column constituted 24% while the submerged (8%), floating leaved
(6%) and free-floating (3%) species made up the remainder.

195

- 196 **Table 1:** Naturalised freshwater species that are considered invasive in Australia. An
- 197 asterisk (\*) indicates that the species is a Weed of National Significance (WONS)
- 198 (http://www.environment.gov.au/biodiversity/invasive/weeds/weeds/lists/wons.html).

Species	Common name	Family
Alternathera philoxeroides (Mart.) Griseb.*	Alligator weed	Amaranthaceae
Arundo donax L.	Giant reed	Poaceae
Cabomba caroliniana A.Gray*	Carolina fanwort	Cabombaceae
Egeria densa Planch.	Leafy elodea	Hydrocharitaceae
Eichhornia crassipes (Mart.) Solms*	Water hyacinth	Pontederiaceae
Gymnocoronis spilanthoides (D.Don ex	Senegal tea	Asteraceae
Hook. & Arn.) DC.		
Hygrophila costata Nees	Glush weed	Acanthaceae
Hymenachne amplexicaulis (Rudge) Nees*	Olive hymenachne	Poaceae
Juncus articulates L.	Jointed rush	Juncaceae
Ludwigia peruviana (L.) H.Hara	Peruvian primrose	Onagraceae
Myriophyllum aquaticum (Vell.) Verdc.	Parrot's feather	Haloragaceae
Sagittaria platyphilla (Engelm.) J.G.Sm.*	Sagittaria	Alismataceae
Salvinia molesta D.S.Mitch.*	Salvinia	Salviniaceae

199

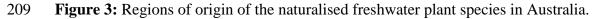
#### 200 **Region of origin**

Exotic naturalised freshwater species originated from a variety of regions, with Europe, South America and North America being the most widely represented (Figure 3). Species that are native to southern and southeast Asia were the most poorly represented with only two reported as naturalised in Australia. Only eight species (12%) did not have

- 205 multiple places of origin. Of the 13 species that are classified as invasive in Australia, 10
- are native to South America.
- 207

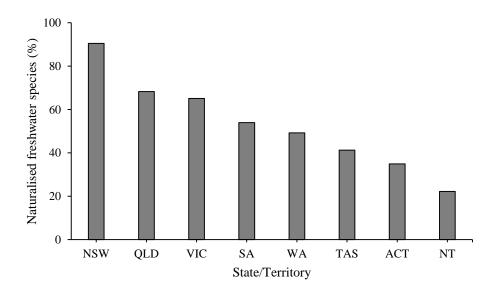


208



#### 210 Distribution in Australia

The largest proportion of the naturalised species (90%) were present in New South Wales (NSW), followed by Queensland (68%) and Victoria (65%) (Figure 4). Northern Territory had the lowest number of naturalised freshwater plant species (14 of the 63 species or 22%). Species that were present in every state include *Cyperus eragrostis* (Cyperaceae), *Arundo donax* (Poaceae), and *Polypogon monspeliensis* (Poaceae).

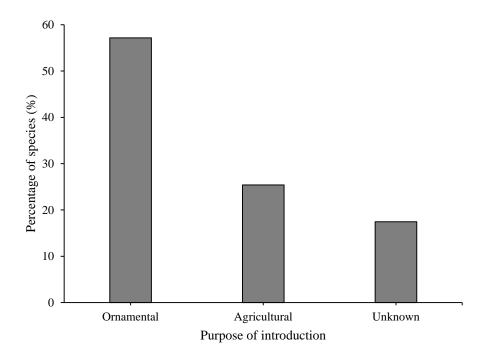


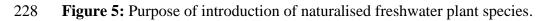
216

Figure 4: Percentage of introduced freshwater plant species present in the states andterritories of Australia.

## 219 Introduction pathways

Almost two-thirds of the species (57%) were introduced for aquarium and ornamental water garden purposes while a further 25% were imported for agricultural purposes including as vegetables, for example *Alternanthera philoxeroides* and *Rorippa* spp., and pasture grasses. The remaining 18% of the species may have been introduced accidentally as there was no information available on their known economic use (Figure 5). Thirty-three percent of the species are currently available for sale within Australia either by water garden nurseries or over the internet (Table 2).





## **Reproduction and dispersal**

Almost half (49%) of the 63 species reproduce both sexually and vegetatively. Seventeen of these species reproduce by means of both seeds and fragmentation while the other 14 reproduce by means of both seeds and rhizomes. Thirty-three percent of the species (21 out of 63) reproduce exclusively by means of seeds whereas the remaining 17% reproduce exclusively by vegetative means. All the species that reproduce exclusively vegetatively, do so by stem fragmentation. Water currents, waterfowl, flood and watercraft were identified as the main dispersal agents of the seeds and stem fragments. 

241 <b>T</b> a	ble 2: Naturalised	l ornamental freshwate	r plant species	s available for sale in A	Australia.
----------------	--------------------	------------------------	-----------------	---------------------------	------------

Species	Common name	Family	Origin	Current status	Occurrence
Aponogeton distachyus L.f.	Cape pond weed	Aponogetonaceae	S. Africa	Naturalised	NSW, SA, TAS,
					VIC
Berula erecta (Huds.) Coville	Water Parsnip	Apiaceae	N. America,	Naturalised	ACT, NSW, QLD,
			Europe, N.		SA, VIC, WA
			Africa, W. Asia		
Bacopa caroliniana (Walter) B.L.Rob.	Lemon bacopa	Plantaginaceae	N. America	Naturalised	NSW, QLD
Cyperus papyrus L.	Papyrus	Cyperaceae	E & S. Africa	Naturalised	NSW, QLD, SA,
					VIC, WA
Cyperus prolifer Lam.	Dwarf papyrus	Cyperaceae	E & S. Africa	Naturalised	NSW, QLD
Hydrocleys nymphoides (Humb. & Bonpl. ex	Water poppy	Alismataceae	C & S. America	Naturalised	ACT, NSW, QLD,
Willd.) Buchenau					VIC
Hygrophila polysperma (Roxb.) T.Anderson	East Indian	Acanthaceae	Indian	Naturalised	NSW, QLD
	hygrophila		subcontinent		

Hypericum elodes L.	Marsh St. John's	Hypericaceae	Europe	Naturalised	NSW
	wort				
Ludwigia palustris (L.) Elliott	Marsh ludwigia	Onagraceae	N. America,	Naturalised	NSW, SA, VIC
			Europe, N & S.		
			Africa, W. Asia		
Ludwigia repens J.R.Forst.	Red ludwigia	Onagraceae	N & S. America	Naturalised	NSW, QLD, SA,
					WA
Mentha aquatica L.	Water mint	Lamiaceae	Europe, N.	Naturalised	SA, WA
			Africa, W. Asia		
Mentha pulegium L.	Pennyroyal	Lamiaceae	Europe, N.	Declared	NSW, QLD, SA,
			Africa, W. Asia		TAS, VIC, WA
Nymphaea caerulea Savigny	Blue water lily	Nymphaeaceae	NE & S. Africa,	Naturalised	NSW, QLD
			W. Asia		
Nymphaea mexicana Zucc.	Yellow water lily	Nymphaeaceae	N & C. America	Naturalised	NSW, QLD, SA,
					VIC, WA

Phalaris arundinacea L.	Reed Canary grass	Poaceae	N. America,	Naturalised	ACT, NSW, SA,
			Europe, N.		TAS, VIC, WA
			Africa, W. Asia		
Pontederia cordata L.	Pickerel weed	Pontederiaceae	America (N, C,	Declared	ACT, NSW, QLD,
			& S)		SA, VIC
Rorippa nasturtium-aquaticum (L.) Hayek	Water cress	Brassicaceae	Europe, N.	Naturalised	ACT, NSW, QLD,
			Africa, W. Asia		SA, TAS, VIC,
					WA
Rotala rotundifolia (BuchHam. ex Roxb.)	Roundleaf	Lythraceae	SE Asia	Naturalised	NSW, QLD, TAS
Koehne	toothcup				
Typha latifolia L.	Broadleaf cattail	Typhaceae	Europe	Declared	NSW, TAS, VIC
Veronica anagallis-aquatica L.	Blue water	Plantaginaceae	N. America,	Naturalised	ACT, NSW, QLD,
	speedwell		Europe		SA, TAS, VIC
Zantedeschia aethiopica (L.) Spreng.	Arum lily	Araceae	S. Africa	Declared	NSW, SA, TAS,
					VIC, WA

## 243 Discussion

244 Our search identified sixty-three exotic freshwater plant species that have become 245 naturalised in Australia, a large proportion of which are perennial species that grow along 246 the margins of wetlands. They belong to 26 families representing 16% of families of the 247 naturalised flora. The majority of the species originated from Europe, South America and 248 North America and are currently most widely distributed along the eastern coastal fringes 249 of the country. They were mostly introduced for ornamental purposes via the aquarium 250 and water garden plant trade. The majority of the species reproduce both sexually and 251 vegetatively, with water currents, waterfowl and watercraft identified as their main 252 dispersal vectors. 253 Given that there are 2739 naturalised plant species in Australia (Randall, 2007), 254 freshwater plant species represent a very low proportion (slightly over 2%). However, 255 despite their seemingly small number, they may have disproportionately strong 256 environmental impacts as exemplified by the fact that nearly 20% of the Weeds of 257 National Significance are freshwater species (6 out of 32) 258 (http://www.environment.gov.au/biodiversity/invasive/weeds/weeds/lists/wons.html). This 259 may be partly attributed to the widespread geographic distribution of many of these 260 naturalised freshwater species, with most species found in multiple states within Australia. 261 More than 40% of the naturalised freshwater plant species we identified are categorised as 262 either invasive or declared weeds in Australia. This proportion is much greater than for the 263 naturalised terrestrial flora of which around 14% have become invasive (Leishman et al., 264 2017).

265 Of the naturalised freshwater species in our analysis, a large majority are in the 266 Poaceae, Cyperaceae and Plantaginaceae families. These families are among the twenty

most commonly represented in the naturalised Australian flora (Dodd *et al.*, 2015) and
reflect the Australasian (Jacobs & Wilson, 1996) and worldwide (Chambers *et al.*, 2008)
trends where Poaceae and Cyperaceae are the most species-rich freshwater plant families.
Many plants belonging to Poaceae and Cyperaceae are important pasture crops on which
livestock production in Australia relies heavily (Cook & Dias, 2006), which may further
explain their dominance compared to the other families.

The majority of the naturalised species we identified are perennial, clonal plants 273 274 with the ability to exploit heterogeneous habitats. Clonality may explain the invasion 275 success of some of these species as it enhances persistence and spread of plants at local 276 scales (Santamaría, 2002). The largest proportion (57%) of the species in our analysis 277 were emergent species that grow on the margins of water bodies. This may be due to water 278 margins being suitable for species that can withstand periodic submergence as well as 279 helophytes that can cope with periodic drawdowns (Lacoul & Freedman, 2006). In 280 contrast, open water bodies provide a narrower range of environmental conditions, 281 resulting in fewer species being suited to that habitat. The overrepresentation of the 282 species that grow on the margins of wetlands in our analysis may also have resulted from 283 study biases since these species are conspicuous and easier to sample and identify, in 284 contrast to, for example, the submerged species. In addition, emergent species that occur 285 along the margins of water bodies are able to disperse their propagules not only by water 286 but also by wind, allowing them to colonise widely across the landscape (Soomers et al., 287 2013).

288 Many naturalised freshwater plant species in Australia have originated from 289 Europe, South America and North America. This is largely due to historical and trade 290 linkages between Australia and these continents. However, these regions of origin are

291 likely to have shifted through time, with invasion success of plant species from Europe 292 strongly linked with European settlement in Australia (Phillips et al., 2010) and more 293 recent successful introductions originating from South America now contributing a large 294 proportion of naturalised freshwater plant species. We observed that the majority of the 295 naturalised freshwater plant species in our study had multiple broad regions of origin, 296 probably due to selective advantages provided by asexual reproduction and long distance 297 dispersal of propagules (Santamaría, 2002). Species with large native ranges tend to have 298 broad environmental tolerances and thus may be effectively pre-adapted to their 299 introduced range (Pyšek et al., 2009; Keller et al., 2011). This may explain why the 300 naturalised freshwater species of Australia are small in number but a large proportion have spread extensively across the continent and are now considered as species of concern. 301

302 New South Wales, Queensland and Victoria, the most densely populated states 303 (A.B.S., 2018), also have the highest numbers of naturalised freshwater species. This is 304 not surprising as there is a strong correlation between human population density and exotic 305 species richness, due to humans being responsible for the initial deliberate or accidental 306 introduction of exotic species (Weber, Sun & Li, 2008; Dodd et al., 2016; Haque et al., 307 2017). Furthermore, a higher human population density also means a higher number of 308 potential aquarium keepers, representing a greater propagule pressure (Hussner et al., 309 2010). Alternatively, biases in herbarium specimen collection may have painted a picture 310 of relatively higher species numbers in the densely populated states than reality (Lavoie et 311 al., 2012; Dodd et al., 2016; Haque et al., 2017). It has been observed that the intensity 312 of herbarium specimen collection in Australia, on which our species regional distribution 313 analysis relied, was higher in the densely populated areas (Dodd et al., 2016).

314 Our analysis revealed that almost 60% of the freshwater plant species naturalised 315 in Australia were deliberately introduced for ornamental and aquarium purposes. This is 316 consistent with other studies globally reporting that importation and trade in ornamental 317 plants is the most important pathway for freshwater plant introductions (Champion, 318 Clayton & Hofstra, 2010; Strayer, 2010; Keller et al., 2011). In the past it has been 319 suggested that 85% of aquatic weeds in Australia were traded as aquarium or water garden 320 plants (Petroeschevsky & Champion, 2008). We found that a third of Australia's 321 naturalised freshwater plant species are currently available by trade for either ornamental 322 or agricultural purposes. Surprisingly, among these actively traded species are four 323 declared weeds (Mentha pulegium, Pontederia cordata, Typha latifolia and Zantedeschia 324 aethiopica). It is also possible that some of these species are traded because of misspelled 325 or incorrect scientific names that mask their exotic status (Brunel, 2009). For example, we 326 found that an aquarium supplier had listed *Eleocharis* for sale without specifying the 327 species. There are also reports of aquarium plant dealers who, mostly due to ignorance, 328 misrepresent exotic plants as similar-appearing native ones (Kay & Hoyle, 2001). A more 329 serious practice that may have contributed to infestation of many waterways of Australia is 330 the deliberate cultivation of exotic ornamental plants in natural waterways by aquarium 331 traders in order to meet customer demands (Petroeschevsky & Champion, 2008).

332 Twenty-five percent of the naturalised freshwater species of Australia have been 333 introduced deliberately for agricultural purposes. These include traditional vegetable 334 species such as *Alternathera philoxeroides* and *Rorippa* spp., and garden herbs such as 335 *Mentha aquatica*. However, the majority of the agricultural species are ponded pasture 336 plants that were introduced for livestock grazing. Since commercial livestock production 337 is a major contributor to the Australian economy, many state governments actively 338 promoted introduction of exotic ponded pasture species through much of the 20<sup>th</sup> century

339 (Cook & Dias, 2006; Cook & Grice, 2013). These species may have then spread across
340 the broader landscape through natural dispersal mechanisms.

341 Almost a fifth of the naturalised freshwater plant species in Australia have no 342 known economic uses and may have been introduced inadvertently in ballast water or as 343 contaminants of other deliberately imported species, which is a common occurrence (Kay 344 & Hoyle, 2001). For example, Maki and Galatowitsch (2004) found that ten percent of 345 freshwater plants that they obtained commercially contained exotic plant contaminants. 346 Occasionally, some of these contaminants prove attractive and easy to grow and are 347 therefore placed on the market. A good example is Salvinia molesta, which was introduced 348 initially as a contaminant of other plants but was considered sufficiently attractive to be 349 consequently traded as an ornamental species in Texas, USA for several years (Kay & 350 Hoyle, 2001).

Many of the naturalised plants in our analysis reproduce both sexually and vegetatively, and are easily dispersed by water currents and floods, wind, water birds and watercraft (Santamaría, 2002). As vegetative spread and multiple dispersal vectors enhance establishment and therefore naturalisation success (Keller *et al.*, 2011), these factors may also be drivers of invasion success of these naturalised freshwater plants.

From our study, we can conclude that although naturalised freshwater plant species form a very small proportion of the naturalised flora, they nevertheless are an important component of the Australian flora, being widespread across multiple regions. In spite of the existence of many statutory and regulatory measures to control trade in potential weeds in Australia at local, state and federal levels, a few declared weeds continue to be traded. A strict enforcement of these controls is therefore necessary through monitoring of the online aquarium market and periodically assessing compliance by nurseries through site

visits. It is also important that we continue to assess the weed risk of naturalised species
in light of ongoing environmental and climatic changes and to monitor potential spread of
wild populations constantly (Champion, Clayton & Hofstra, 2010). Finally, accessing
information on naturalised freshwater plants ranging from the local to state level is
difficult as data are contained within disparate sites. Therefore, a centralised system of
storing data on ecology and management of naturalised freshwater plant species would be
desirable for better knowledge sharing.

371 Acknowledgements

We thank Rachael Gallagher for the initial list of exotic freshwater plant species in Australia. Anthony Manea provided helpful comments on earlier versions of this manuscript, for which we are grateful. We also thank the anonymous reviewers whose inputs greatly helped improve the manuscript.

376

#### 377 **References**

A.B.S. (2018) Australian demographic statistics, September 2017. Australian Bureau of
Statistics http://www.abs.gov.au/ausstats/abs@.nsf/mf/3101.0.

380 Abell R., Thieme M.L., Revenga C., Bryer M., Kottelat M., Bogutskaya N., Coad B.,

Mandrak N., Balderas S.C. & Bussing W. (2008) Freshwater ecoregions of the
world: A new map of biogeographic units for freshwater biodiversity conservation. *BioScience*, 58, 403-414.

Aston H.I. (1973) Aquatic plants of Australia: A guide to the identification of the aquatic *ferns and flowering plants of Australia, both native and naturalized,* Melbourne
University Press, Carlton, Victoria.

- Balian E., Segers H., Lévêque C. & Martens K. (2008) The freshwater animal diversity
  assessment: An overview of the results. *Hydrobiologia*, **595**, 627-637.
- Boylen C., Eichler L. & Madsen J. (1999) Loss of native aquatic plant species in a
- 390 community dominated by Eurasian watermilfoil. *Hydrobiologia*, **415**, 207-211.
- Brundu G. (2015) Plant invaders in European and Mediterranean inland waters: Profiles,
  distribution, and threats. *Hydrobiologia*, **746**, 61-79.
- Brunel S. (2009) Pathway analysis: Aquatic plants imported in 10 EPPO countries. *EPPO Bulletin*, **39**, 201-213.
- Chambers P., Lacoul P., Murphy K. & Thomaz S. (2008) Global diversity of aquatic
  macrophytes in freshwater. *Hydrobiologia*, **595**, 9-26.
- Champion P., Clayton J. & Hofstra D. (2010) Nipping aquatic plant invasions in the bud:
  Weed risk assessment and the trade. *Hydrobiologia*, **656**, 167-172.
- 399 Chatterjee A. & Dewanji A. (2014) Effect of varying Alternanthera philoxeroides
- 400 (alligator weed) cover on the macrophyte species diversity of pond ecosystems: A
  401 quadrat-based study. *Aquatic Invasions*, 9, 343-355.
- 402 Cook G.D. & Dias L. (2006) It was no accident: Deliberate plant introductions by
- 403 Australian government agencies during the 20th century. *Australian Journal of*
- 404 *Botany*, **54**, 601-625.
- 405 Cook G.D. & Grice A. (2013) Historical perspectives on invasive grasses and their impact
  406 on wildlife in Australia. *Wildlife Society Bulletin*, **37**, 469-477.
- 407 Crisp M.D., Laffan S., Linder H.P. & Monro A. (2001) Endemism in the Australian flora.
  408 *Journal of Biogeography*, 28, 183-198.
- Dodd A.J., Burgman M.A., Mccarthy M.A. & Ainsworth N. (2015) The changing patterns
  of plant naturalization in Australia. *Diversity and Distributions*, 21, 1038-1050.

411	Dodd A.J., Mccarthy M.A., Ainsworth N. & Burgman M.A. (2016) Identifying hotspots of
412	alien plant naturalisation in Australia: Approaches and predictions. Biological
413	Invasions, 18, 631-645.
414	Downing J.A., Prairie Y.T., Cole J.J., Duarte C.M., Tranvik L.J., Striegl R.G., Mcdowell
415	W.H., Kortelainen P., Caraco N.F., Melack J.M. & Middelburg J.J. (2006) The
416	global abundance and size distribution of lakes, ponds, and impoundments.
417	Limnology and Oceanography, <b>51</b> , 2388-2397.
418	Dudgeon D., Arthington A.H., Gessner M.O., Kawabata ZI., Knowler D.J., Lévêque C.,
419	Naiman R.J., Prieur-Richard AH., Soto D. & Stiassny M.L. (2006) Freshwater
420	biodiversity: Importance, threats, status and conservation challenges. Biological
421	<i>Reviews</i> , <b>81</b> , 163-182.
422	Duursma D.E., Gallagher R.V., Roger E., Hughes L., Downey P.O. & Leishman M.R.
423	(2013) Next-generation invaders? Hotspots for naturalised sleeper weeds in
424	Australia under future climates. Plos One, 8, e84222.
425	Evangelista H.B.A., Thomaz S.M. & Umetsu C.A. (2014) An analysis of publications on
426	invasive macrophytes in aquatic ecosystems. Aquatic Invasions, 9, 521-528.
427	Evans M.C., Watson J.E.M., Fuller R.A., Venter O., Bennett S.C., Marsack P.R. &
428	Possingham H.P. (2011) The spatial distribution of threats to species in Australia.
429	<i>BioScience</i> , <b>61</b> , 281-289.
430	Groves R. (2006) Are some weeds sleeping? Some concepts and reasons. Euphytica, 148,
431	111-120.
432	Haque M.M., Nipperess D.A., Gallagher R.V. & Beaumont L.J. (2017) How well
433	documented is Australia's flora? Understanding spatial bias in vouchered plant
434	specimens. Austral Ecology, 42, 690-699.

- Havel J.E., Kovalenko K.E., Thomaz S.M., Amalfitano S. & Kats L.B. (2015) Aquatic
  invasive species: Challenges for the future. *Hvdrobiologia*, **750**, 147-170.
- Hussner A. (2012) Alien aquatic plant species in European countries. *Weed Research*, 52,
  297-306.
- 439 Hussner A., Van De Weyer K., Gross E. & Hilt S. (2010) Comments on increasing
- 440 number and abundance of non-indigenous aquatic macrophyte species in Germany.
  441 *Weed Research*, **50**, 519-526.
- 442 Jacobs S. & Wilson K. (1996) A biogeographical analysis of the freshwater plants of

443 Australasia. *Australian Systematic Botany*, **9**, 169-183.

444 Kay S.H. & Hoyle S.T. (2001) Mail order, the internet, and invasive aquatic weeds.

*Journal of Aquatic Plant Management*, **39**, 88-91.

- Keller R.P., Geist J., Jeschke J.M. & Kühn I. (2011) Invasive species in Europe: Ecology,
  status, and policy. *Environmental Sciences Europe*, 23, 23.
- Lacoul P. & Freedman B. (2006) Environmental influences on aquatic plants in freshwater
  ecosystems. *Environmental Reviews*, 14, 89-136.
- 450 Lavoie C., Saint-Louis A., Guay G., Groeneveld E. & Villeneuve P. (2012) Naturalization
- 451 of exotic plant species in north-eastern North America: trends and detection
- 452 capacity. *Diversity and Distributions*, **18**, 180-190.
- 453 Leishman M.R. & Gallagher R.V. (2015) Will there be a shift to alien-dominated
- vegetation assemblages under climate change? *Diversity and Distributions*, 21,
  848-852.
- 456 Leishman M.R., Gallagher R.V., Catford J.A., Grice T., Morgan J. & Setterfield S. (2017)
- 457 Invasive plants and pathogens in Australia. In: *Australian Vegetation*. (Ed D.
- 458 Keith), pp. 207-229. Cambridge University Press.

Mack R.N., Simberloff D., Mark Lonsdale W., Evans H., Clout M. & Bazzaz F.A. (2000)
Biotic invasions: causes, epidemiology, global consequences, and control.

461 *Ecological Applications*, **10**, 689-710.

- 462 Maki K. & Galatowitsch S. (2004) Movement of invasive aquatic plants into Minnesota
  463 (USA) through horticultural trade. *Biological Conservation*, **118**, 389-396.
- 464 Petroeschevsky A. & Champion P. Preventing further introduction and spread of aquatic
- weeds through the ornamental plant trade. In: *Brisbane: 16th Australian Weeds Conference, Queensland Weeds Society*, pp. 399-4022008.
- 467 Phillips M.L., Murray B.R., Leishman M.R. & Ingram R. (2010) The naturalization to
- 468 invasion transition: Are there introduction-history correlates of invasiveness in
  469 exotic plants of Australia? *Austral Ecology*, **35**, 695-703.
- 470 Pyšek P., Jarošík V., Pergl J., Randall R., Chytrý M., Kühn I., Tichý L., Danihelka J.,
- 471 Chrtek Jun J. & Sádlo J. (2009) The global invasion success of Central European
- 472 plants is related to distribution characteristics in their native range and species
  473 traits. *Diversity and Distributions*, **15**, 891-903.
- 474 Randall R.P. (2007) *The introduced flora of Australia and its weed status*, CRC for
- 475 Australian Weed Management Adelaide.
- 476 Revenga C., Campbell I., Abell R., De Villiers P. & Bryer M. (2005) Prospects for
- 477 monitoring freshwater ecosystems towards the 2010 targets. *Philosophical*478 *Transactions of the Royal Society B: Biological Sciences*, **360**, 397-413.
- 479 Richardson D.M., Pyšek P., Rejmanek M., Barbour M.G., Panetta F.D. & West C.J.
- 480 (2000) Naturalization and invasion of alien plants: Concepts and definitions.
- 481 *Diversity and Distributions*, **6**, 93-107.

- 482 Richardson D.M. & Van Wilgen B.W. (2004) Invasive alien plants in South Africa: how
  483 well do we understand the ecological impacts?: working for water. *South African*484 *Journal of Science*, 100, 45-52.
- 485 Sainty G.R. & Jacobs S.W. (2003) *Waterplants in Australia*, Sainty and Associates Pty
  486 Ltd.
- 487 Sala O.E., Stuart Chapin F., Iii, Armesto J.J., Berlow E., Bloomfield J., Dirzo R., Huber-
- 488 Sanwald E., Huenneke L.F., Jackson R.B., Kinzig A., Leemans R., Lodge D.M.,
- 489 Mooney H.A., Oesterheld M.N., Poff N.L., Sykes M.T., Walker B.H., Walker M.
- 490 & Wall D.H. (2000) Global Biodiversity Scenarios for the Year 2100. Science,
- **4**91 **287,** 1770-1774.
- 492 Santamaría L. (2002) Why are most aquatic plants widely distributed? Dispersal, clonal
- 493 growth and small-scale heterogeneity in a stressful environment. *Acta Oecologica*,
  494 **23**, 137-154.
- Saunders D.L., Meeuwig J.J. & Vincent A.C.J. (2002) Freshwater Protected Areas:
  Strategies for Conservation. *Conservation Biology*, **16**, 30-41.
- 497 Scott J.K., Batchelor K.L., Ota N. & Yeoh P.B. Modelling climate change impacts on
- 498 sleeper and alert weeds. In: *Proceedings of the 16th Australian Weeds Conference*,
- 499 Cairns Convention Centre, North Queensland, Australia, 18-22 May, 2008, pp.
- 500 143-1452008. Queensland Weed Society.
- 501 Soomers H., Karssenberg D., Soons M.B., Verweij P.A., Verhoeven J.T. & Wassen M.J.
- 502 (2013) Wind and water dispersal of wetland plants across fragmented landscapes.
  503 *Ecosystems*, 16, 434-451.
- 504 Sorte C.J., Ibáñez I., Blumenthal D.M., Molinari N.A., Miller L.P., Grosholz E.D., Diez
- 505 J.M., D'antonio C.M., Olden J.D. & Jones S.J. (2013) Poised to prosper? A cross-

510	Weber E., Sun SG. & Li B. (2008) Invasive alien plants in China: Diversity and
511	ecological insights. Biological Invasions, 10, 1411-1429.
512	Williams J.A. & West C.J. (2000) Environmental weeds in Australia and New Zealand:
513	issues and approaches to management. Austral Ecology, 25, 425-444.
514	Williamson M.H. & Fitter A. (1996) The characters of successful invaders. Biological
515	Conservation, <b>78</b> , 163-170.
516	Yarrow M., Marin V.H., Finlayson M., Tironi A., Delgado L.E. & Fischer F. (2009) The
517	ecology of Egeria densa Planchon (Liliopsida: alismatales): A wetland ecosystem
518	engineer? Revista Chilena de Historia Natural, 82, 299-313.
519	
520	Supplementary materials
520 521	Supplementary materials Appendix 1: Titles reviewed for collation of the naturalised species list
521	
521 522	Appendix 1: Titles reviewed for collation of the naturalised species list
521 522 523	<ul><li>Appendix 1: Titles reviewed for collation of the naturalised species list</li><li>Bell K.L., Heard T.A. &amp; Van Klinken R.D. (2011) Natural enemies of invasive</li></ul>
521 522 523 524	<ul> <li>Appendix 1: Titles reviewed for collation of the naturalised species list</li> <li>Bell K.L., Heard T.A. &amp; Van Klinken R.D. (2011) Natural enemies of invasive</li> <li><i>Hymenachne amplexicaulis</i> and its native congener in Australia and the potential</li> </ul>
521 522 523 524 525	<ul> <li>Appendix 1: Titles reviewed for collation of the naturalised species list</li> <li>Bell K.L., Heard T.A. &amp; Van Klinken R.D. (2011) Natural enemies of invasive</li> <li><i>Hymenachne amplexicaulis</i> and its native congener in Australia and the potential for biological control. <i>Biological Control</i>, 57, 130-137.</li> </ul>

system comparison of climate change effects on native and non-native species

other stressors, and prospects for the future. Freshwater Biology, 55, 152-174.

Strayer D.L. (2010) Alien species in fresh waters: ecological effects, interactions with

performance. Ecology Letters, 16, 261-270.

506

507

508

509

- Brinson M.M. & Malvarez A.I. (2002) Temperate freshwater wetlands: Types, status, and
  threats. *Environmental Conservation*, 29, 115-133.
- 531 Brooks S.J., Panetta F.D. & Galway K.E. (2008) Progress towards the eradication of
- mikania vine (*Mikania micrantha*) and limnocharis (*Limnocharis flava*) in northern
  Australia. *Invasive Plant Science and Management*, 1, 296-303.
- 534 Cabrera-Walsh G., Schooler S. & Julien M. (2011) Biology and preliminary host range of
- 535 *Hydrotimetes natans* Kolbe (Coleoptera: Curculionidae), a natural enemy
- 536 candidate for biological control of *Cabomba caroliniana* Gray (Cabombaceae) in
- 537 Australia. *Australian Journal of Entomology*, **50**, 200-206.
- 538 Chessman B.C., Fryirs K.A. & Brierley G.J. (2006) Linking geomorphic character,
- behaviour and condition to fluvial biodiversity: Implications for river management.

540 *Aquatic Conservation-Marine and Freshwater Ecosystems*, **16**, 267-288.

- 541 Clarke A., Lake P.S. & O'dowd D.J. (2004) Ecological impacts on aquatic
- 542 macroinvertebrates following upland stream invasion by a ponded pasture grass
- 543 (*Glyceria maxima*) in southern Australia. *Marine and freshwater research*, **55**,
- 544 709-713.
- 545 Clements D., Dugdale T.M., Butler K.L. & Hunt T.D. (2014) Management of aquatic
- 546 alligator weed (*Alternanthera philoxeroides*) in an early stage of invasion.

547 *Management of Biological Invasions*, **5**, 327-339.

- 548 Douglas M.M. & O'connor R.A. (2003) Effects of the exotic macrophyte, para grass
  549 (*Urochloa mutica*), on benthic and epiphytic macroinvertebrates of a tropical
- 550 floodplain. *Freshwater Biology*, **48**, 962-971.
- Dugdale T.M., Clements D., Hunt T.D. & Butler K.L. (2012) Survival of a submerged
  aquatic weed (*Egeria densa*) during lake drawdown within mounds of stranded
  vegetation. *Lake and Reservoir Management*, 28, 153-157.

554	Ferdinands K., Beggs K. & Whitehead P. (2005) Biodiversity and invasive grass species:
555	Multiple-use or monoculture? Wildlife Research, <b>32</b> , 447-457.
556	Green A.J., Jenkins K.M., Bell D., Morris P.J. & Kingsford R.T. (2008) The potential role
557	of waterbirds in dispersing invertebrates and plants in arid Australia. Freshwater
558	<i>Biology</i> , <b>53</b> , 380-392.
559	Greenway M. (1997) Nutrient content of wetland plants in constructed wetlands receiving
560	municipal effluent in tropical Australia. Water Science and Technology, 35, 135-
561	142.
562	Greenway M. (2003) Suitability of macrophytes for nutrient removal from surface flow
563	constructed wetlands receiving secondary treated sewage effluent in Queensland,
564	Australia. Water Science and Technology, 48, 121-128.
565	Greenway M. & Woolley A. (1999) Constructed wetlands in Queensland: Performance
566	efficiency and nutrient bioaccumulation. Ecological Engineering, 12, 39-55.
567	Greet J., Webb J.A. & Cousens R.D. (2015) Floods reduce the prevalence of exotic plant
568	species within the riparian zone: Evidence from natural floods. Applied Vegetation
569	Science, <b>18</b> , 503-512.
570	Grella C., Renshaw A. & Wright I.A. (2018) Invasive weeds in urban riparian zones: The
571	influence of catchment imperviousness and soil chemistry across an urbanization
572	gradient. Urban Ecosystems, 21, 505-517.
573	Gunasekera L. & Bonila J. (2001) Alligator weed: Tasty vegetable in Australian
574	backyards? Journal of Aquatic Plant Management, <b>39,</b> 17-20.
575	Haddadchi A., Gross C.L. & Fatemi M. (2013) The expansion of sterile Arundo donax
576	(Poaceae) in southeastern Australia is accompanied by genotypic variation.
577	Aquatic Botany, <b>104</b> , 153-161.

578	Jacobs S.W.L., Perrett F., Sainty G.R., Bowmer K.H. & Jacobs B.J. (1994) Ludwigia
579	peruviana (Onagraceae) in the Botany Wetlands near Sydney, Australia.
580	Australian Journal of Marine and Freshwater Research, 45, 1481-1490.
581	Januchowski-Hartley S.R., Visconti P. & Pressey R.L. (2011) A systematic approach for
582	prioritizing multiple management actions for invasive species. Biological
583	Invasions, <b>13</b> , 1241-1253.
584	Jayawardana J., Westbrooke M., Wilson M. & Hurst C. (2006) Macroinvertebrate
585	communities in willow (Salix spp.) and reed beds (Phragmites australis) in central
586	Victorian streams in Australia. Marine and freshwater research, 57, 429-439.
587	Kriticos D.J. & Brunel S. (2016) Assessing and managing the current and future pest risk
588	from water hyacinth, (Eichhornia crassipes), an invasive aquatic plant threatening
589	the environment and water security. Plos One, 11.
590	Kwong R.M., Broadhurst L.M., Keener B.R., Coetzee J.A., Knerr N. & Martin G.D.
591	(2017) Genetic analysis of native and introduced populations of the aquatic weed
592	Sagittaria platyphylla - Implications for biological control in Australia and South
593	Africa. Biological Control, 112, 10-19.
594	Kwong R.M., Sagliocco J.L., Harms N.E., Butler K.L., Green P.T. & Martin G.D. (2017)
595	Biogeographical comparison of the emergent macrophyte, Sagittaria platyphylla in
596	its native and introduced ranges. Aquatic Botany, 141, 1-9.
597	Loo S.E., Mac Nally R., O'dowd D.J. & Lake P.S. (2009) Secondary Invasions:
598	Implications of riparian restoration for in-stream invasion by an aquatic grass.
599	Restoration Ecology, 17, 378-385.
600	Loo S.E., Mac Nally R., O'dowd D.J., Thomson J.R. & Lake P.S. (2009) Multiple scale
601	analysis of factors influencing the distribution of an invasive aquatic grass.
602	Biological Invasions, 11, 1903-1912.

603	Mackay S.J., James C.S. & Arthington A.H. (2010) Macrophytes as indicators of stream
604	condition in the wet tropics region, Northern Queensland, Australia. Ecological
605	Indicators, 10, 330-340.
606	Mcinerney P.J. & Rees G.N. (2017) Co-invasion hypothesis explains microbial
607	community structure changes in upland streams affected by riparian invader.
608	<i>Freshwater Science</i> , <b>36</b> , 297-306.
609	Mukherjee A., Williams D., Gitzendanner M.A., Overholt W.A. & Cuda J.P. (2016)
610	Microsatellite and chloroplast DNA diversity of the invasive aquatic weed
611	Hygrophila polysperma in native and invasive ranges. Aquatic Botany, <b>129</b> , 55-61.
612	Perna C.N., Cappo M., Pusey B.J., Burrows D.W. & Pearson R.G. (2012) Removal of
613	aquatic weeds greatly enhances fish community richness and diversity: An
614	example from Burdekin River floodplain, tropical Australia. River Research and
615	Applications, 28, 1093-1104.
616	Pollen-Bankhead N., Thomas R.E., Gurnell A.M., Liffen T., Simon A. & O'hare M.T.
617	(2011) Quantifying the potential for flow to remove the emergent aquatic
618	macrophyte Sparganium erectum from the margins of low-energy rivers.
619	Ecological Engineering, <b>37,</b> 1779-1788.
620	Ruiz-Avila R.J. & Klemm V.V. (1996) Management of Hydrocotyle ranunculoides Lf, an
621	aquatic invasive weed of urban waterways in Western Australia. Hydrobiologia,
622	<b>340,</b> 187-190.
623	Schooler S.S. (2008) Shade as a management tool for the invasive submerged macrophyte,
624	Cabomba caroliniana. Journal of Aquatic Plant Management, 46, 168-171.
625	Smith R.G.B. & Brock M.A. (2007) The ups and downs of life on the edge: The influence
626	of water level fluctuations on biomass allocation in two contrasting aquatic plants.
627	<i>Plant Ecology</i> , <b>188</b> , 103-116.

628	Van De Wiel C.C.M., Van Der Schoot J., Van Valkenburg J., Duistermaat H. & Smulders
629	M.J.M. (2009) DNA barcoding discriminates the noxious invasive plant species,
630	floating pennywort (Hydrocotyle ranunculoides L.f.), from non-invasive relatives.
631	Molecular Ecology Resources, 9, 1086-1091.
632	Van Klinken R.D. & Friedel M.H. (2017) Unassisted invasions: Understanding and
633	responding to Australia's high-impact environmental grass weeds. Australian
634	Journal of Botany, <b>65</b> , 678-690.
635	Van Klinken R.D., Panetta F.D. & Coutts S.R. (2013) Are high-impact species
636	predictable? An analysis of naturalised grasses in Northern Australia. Plos One, 8.
637	Weber J., Panetta F.D., Preston C., Watts J. & Crossman N. Weed risk assessment of the
638	DEH Alert List and other non-native plant species. In: 15th Australian weeds
639	conference, papers and proceedings, Adelaide, South Australia, pp. 24-282006.
640	Xu C.Y., Julien M.H., Fatemi M., Girod C., Van Klinken R.D., Gross C.L. & Novak S.J.
641	(2010) Phenotypic divergence during the invasion of Phyla canescens in Australia
642	and France: evidence for selection-driven evolution. <i>Ecology Letters</i> , <b>13</b> , 32-44.
643	Zehnsdorf A., Hussner A., Eismann F., Ronicke H. & Melzer A. (2015) Management
644	options of invasive Elodea nuttallii and Elodea canadensis. Limnologica, 51, 110-
645	117.
646	
647	<b>Appendix 2:</b> Link to the species list used in the analysis
017	<b>Typendux</b> Entry to the species list used in the undrysts

648 <u>https://pirel.files.wordpress.com/2018/11/naturalised\_freshwater\_macrophytes\_au.xlsx</u>
649

## **CHAPTER THREE**

Responses of two invasive exotic and one native freshwater plant species to low additional nitrate doses

Published as 'Gufu G.D., Manea A., Vorreiter L. & Leishman M.R. (2018) Do invasive exotic and native freshwater plant species respond similarly to low additional nitrate doses? *Aquatic Botany*, **151**, 1-8.'

My contribution to the research and paper: Concept – 90%; Data collection – 90%; Analysis – 90%; Writing – 90%

#### 1 Abstract

2 Nutrient status of freshwater ecosystems has a significant influence on biological 3 invasions, species richness and community structure. The role of phosphorus in driving these 4 effects has been widely reported while its co-limitation with nitrogen and other elements has 5 received more recent attention. In a greenhouse experiment, we investigated the growth 6 responses of two invasive exotic (Egeria densa and Salvinia molesta) and one native 7 (Vallisneria spiralis) freshwater plant species to additional low concentrations of nitrate 8 9 and 0.9 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup>). We found that the growth of *E. densa* and *V. spiralis* increased with 10 increasing nitrate concentration. Surprisingly, S. molesta had the fastest growth rate at the 11 midrange nitrate concentration of 0.1 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup> and its leaf production was not affected 12 by nitrate treatment. Irrespective of nitrate concentration, the invasive exotic species, particularly S. molesta, showed much greater growth responses than the native V. spiralis. 13 14 We conclude that freshwater plant growth responses to low nitrate concentrations will be 15 species-specific but the faster growth rates of S. molesta provide an example of how 16 differences between co-occurring invasive exotic species and native species could have 17 profound effects on the structure and function of freshwater ecosystems under changed 18 environmental conditions.

19

Key words: Egeria densa; eutrophication; growth; nutrient; Salvinia molesta; Vallisneria
 spiralis

- 22
- 23
- 24
- 25

#### 26 Introduction

27 Nutrients from anthropogenic sources are increasingly finding their way into water 28 bodies worldwide (Wersal & Madsen, 2011). This is mainly due to the accelerated 29 conversion of natural areas to grazing, cropping and urban uses resulting in nutrient-enriched 30 runoff (Brodie & Mitchell, 2005). For example, waterways in urban areas often contain 31 higher nutrient concentrations than natural freshwater ecosystems (Moss et al., 2013) and 32 eutrophication has become one of the most frequently observed threats to freshwater 33 ecosystems (Sand-Jensen et al., 2000). The nutrient elements regarded as the most important 34 for primary production in freshwater ecosystems are phosphorus (P) and nitrogen (N) 35 (Bornette & Puijalon, 2011; Bracken et al., 2015). However, their relative importance has 36 been subject to intense debate (Moss et al., 2013) that is still unresolved (Penuelas et al., 37 2013).

38 Both P and N directly affect growth and development of freshwater plants (Bornette 39 & Puijalon, 2011). P is often considered the most limiting and at the same time the most 40 detrimental nutrient element since excessive P loading has been implicated in dramatic 41 declines in freshwater species diversity and abundance (Sand-Jensen et al., 2000; Hilt et al., 42 2006). In contrast, N limitation is deemed only transient due to the pervasive occurrence of N-fixers in the environment (Schindler et al., 2008). Moreover, atmospheric reactive N can 43 44 be distributed by precipitation into areas that are otherwise not directly affected by human 45 mediated eutrophication (Elser et al., 2009). However, effects of increased N input into 46 habitats that are normally nutrient-poor can be quite profound as it may lead to reduced 47 freshwater plant diversity and altered community structure and function (Moss *et al.*, 2013).

A direct consequence of eutrophication in freshwater systems is the promotion of
 exotic plant invasions since invasive species tend to respond more strongly to increased

50 nutrient availability than their native counterparts (Van, Wheeler & Center, 1999; Flores-51 Moreno *et al.*, 2016). This has been shown to be the case across a range of invasive plant 52 species (Funk & Vitousek, 2007; Hastwell, Daniel & Vivian-Smith, 2008; Madsen & 53 Wersal, 2008; Hussner, 2009). Under eutrophic conditions invasive exotic species may 54 partially or wholly displace native species from habitats because of their superior competitive 55 ability, resulting in altered community structure (Njambuya, Stiers & Triest, 2011; Gérard, Brion & Triest, 2014; Ceschin et al., 2017). For example, high nitrate concentrations may 56 57 lead to proliferation of more competitive free-floating species (including invasive exotic 58 ones) at the expense of native submerged freshwater plants (Barker et al., 2008). 59 In addition to having enhanced growth in high nutrient conditions, some studies have 60 shown that invasive species may also have greater growth rates in low nutrient habitats due to 61 their high resource use efficiency (Funk & Vitousek, 2007). For instance, the invasive species, *Hydrilla verticillata*, had faster growth rates than the confamilial native species 62 *Vallisneria americana* at low nutrient concentrations of 0.2 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup> (Kennedy, Horth 63 64 & Carr, 2009). Most studies of freshwater plant responses to eutrophication (e.g. Cary & 65 Weerts, 1983; Al-Hamdani & Sirna, 2008; Yu et al., 2015) have focused on high levels of 66 nutrient additions. Relatively less is known about freshwater plant responses to small increases in nutrient levels in oligotrophic systems, which presents a knowledge gap that 67 68 needs to be addressed.

69 The aim of this study was to assess the growth responses of two invasive exotic
70 (*Egeria densa* and *Salvinia molesta*) and one native (*Vallisneria spiralis*) freshwater plant
71 species to low levels of nitrate addition. *Egeria densa* (Brazilian elodea; Hydrocharitaceae) is
72 a rooted perennial, submerged species native to parts of South America (Uruguay-Paraguay73 Brazil) that has been introduced into several water bodies around the world due to its

74 popularity as an aquaculture species (Thiébaut, Gillard & Deleu, 2016). It has become a 75 nuisance in its introduced range because of its rapid growth and is regarded as one of the 76 most invasive freshwater plant species (Curt et al., 2010). Vallisneria spiralis (eelgrass; 77 Hydrocharitaceae) is a widespread rooted submerged Australian native perennial that also 78 occurs in Africa, southern Europe, and southern and eastern Asia (Aston, 1973). Salvinia 79 molesta (salvinia; Salviniaceae) on the other hand, is a free-floating fern native to South 80 America that is one of the most destructive invasive species in the lake and river systems of 81 tropical and subtropical habitats (Schooler *et al.*, 2011). The submerged species are capable 82 of taking up nutrients using their leaves as well as roots (Madsen & Cedergreen, 2002). 83 Salvinia molesta, in contrast, lacks true roots and utilises its highly dissected submerged 84 leaves and the underside of its floating leaves for nutrient uptake (Julien & Bourne, 1986). 85 Egeria densa and other congeners of V. spiralis utilise both dissolved CO<sub>2</sub> and bicarbonate 86 ions (HCO<sub>3</sub>-) for photosynthesis (Pierini & Thomaz, 2004; Yin et al., 2017). However, E. 87 densa is a C<sub>4</sub> species while V. spiralis is a C<sub>3</sub> species that also fixes carbon via crassulacean 88 acid metabolism (CAM)-like pathway (Webb, Rattray & Brown, 1988; Casati, Lara & 89 Andreo, 2000). Like most free-floating species, S. molesta has a C<sub>3</sub> carbon fixation pathway 90 (Longstreth, 1989).

91 These species have a wide distribution in the lowland freshwater systems of eastern 92 Australia (Roberts, Church & Cummins, 1999). They commonly co-occur in the 93 Hawkesbury-Nepean River system which is a major waterway in the greater Sydney region 94 of New South Wales (NSW), Australia (Rahman & Salbe, 1995; Roberts, Church & 95 Cummins, 1999). The health of this river system is vitally important as it provides 90% of Sydney's drinking water (Rahman & Salbe, 1995) and has a significant conservation and 96 97 recreation value (Howell & Benson, 2000). Understanding the invasion risk of exotic species 98 into the uninvaded sections of this system at relevant nitrate concentrations should be a high

priority in order to inform future management decisions. We therefore grew the plant species
in monocultures in a controlled greenhouse experiment across a range of low nitrate
treatments (0.02-0.9 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup>). We hypothesise that:

(i) all species will have greater growth rates and lower foliar C:N ratios in the higher
nitrate concentrations due to nitrates benefiting the growth of freshwater plants.
(ii) the invasive exotics growth response will be relatively greater than that of the
native *V. spiralis*, particularly at the higher levels of the nitrate concentrations.

106

## 107 Methods

#### 108 Greenhouse conditions

109 The experiment was conducted in greenhouses at the Plant Growth Facility of 110 Macquarie University (NSW, Australia; 33.7745° S, 151.1169° E). The ambient temperature 111 of the greenhouses was maintained at 27°C/22°C day/night producing water temperatures of 112 24°C/19°C day/night. This temperature range is consistent with the mean lower Hawkesbury 113 River summer water temperatures (Sydney Water, unpublished data). The temperature, 114 humidity and photosynthetically active radiation (PAR) of the greenhouses were continuously 115 monitored using a Multi-grow Controller System (Autogrow Systems, Auckland, New 116 Zealand). The average midday PAR at the water surface was 550 ( $\pm$ 320) µmol m<sup>-2</sup> s<sup>-1</sup>. 117 Underwater PAR was not measured due to logistical challenges. The greenhouses received 150 µmol m<sup>-2</sup> s<sup>-1</sup> supplemental lighting using LED red and blue Grow lights (Philips, 118 119 Eindhoven, Netherlands) for two hours per day to ensure a photoperiod of 13/11 day/night 120 hours. The average humidity at midday ranged between 65-75%.

121



122

Figure 1: Photos of (a) *E. densa*, (b) *V. spiralis*, and (c) *S. molesta* during harvest after four
weeks of growth

## 125 **Plant preparation**

*Egeria densa* plants (Figure 1a) were obtained from Manly Dam (Warringah, NSW,
Australia; 33.7818° S, 151.2556° E), whereas *V. spiralis* (Figure 1b) were obtained from a
commercial supplier (Austral Watergardens, Cowan, NSW, Australia; 33.5772° S, 151.1857°
E). *Salvinia molesta* plants (Figure 1c) were collected from Lake Munmorah (Wyong, NSW,
Australia; 33.1923° S, 151.5749° E). The plants were collected on various dates between 27<sup>th</sup>
June and 15<sup>th</sup> July 2016 and maintained in tap water until propagation.

132 Before planting, E. densa and V. spiralis plants were gently washed under running tap 133 water and a fine paint brush was used to remove periphytes and herbivores. The plants were 134 then trimmed to the following dimensions: 10 cm leaf length for V. spiralis (method adopted 135 from Blanch, Ganf & Walker, 1998; Kennedy, Horth & Carr, 2009; Yu et al., 2015), 5 cm 136 stem length with an axillary shoot for *E. densa* and a rhizome section  $(0.023 \pm 0.009 \text{ g dry})$ weight) consisting of two fully grown healthy leaves without an apical bud for S. molesta. 137 138 Once prepared, each plant was drained for two minutes on a paper towel and the wet weight 139 measured using an analytical electronic balance (Mettler Toledo, Port Melbourne, VIC, Australia). The number of leaves of each V. spiralis plant was also recorded. In order to 140

141 obtain the initial dry weights of the experimental plants, we determined the relationship between wet and dry weights of a sub-sample of 20 individual plants of each species. The wet 142 143 weights of the experimental plants were then used to calculate their initial dry weights using 144 the regression equation calculated from the wet and dry weights of the sub-sample of plants. 145 The sub-sample plants were also used to obtain the initial mean foliar C and N content of 146 each freshwater plant species. This was done by grinding 0.5 g of dry leaf biomass from each 147 plant using a cross beater mill (Glen Creston, Stanmore, UK) and then analysing these samples using combustion with a TruSpec CHN analyser (LECO, St Joseph, MI, USA). 148

149 A sub-sample of ten plants from each submerged freshwater plant species (E. densa 150 and V. spiralis), prepared in the same manner as the experimental plants, were used to obtain 151 chlorophyll-a levels as a proxy for the initial periphytic algal load. This was done by shaking 152 each plant by hand in a beaker containing 300 mL tap water for 90 seconds (Zimba & Hopson, 1997; Jones et al., 2002). Chlorophyll-a analysis of the wash water from each plant 153 154 was then conducted by a commercial laboratory following APHA 10200H method (APHA, 155 1998). This process was repeated for each of the plants harvested at the end of the experiment 156 (after 6 weeks) to determine the amount of periphytic algae accumulated over the growth 157 period. At the end of the experiment samples of the water column were collected and sent to 158 a commercial laboratory for determination of chlorophyll-a concentration as a proxy for 159 phytoplankton load. We assumed phytoplankton load was zero at the start of the experiment 160 as we used reverse osmosis (RO) water.

## 161 Experimental design

162 The experiment began on 25<sup>th</sup> July 2016 when all plants were placed in their 163 respective tubs and ended six weeks later when the final harvest was conducted on 6<sup>th</sup> 164 September 2016. The experimental plants were grown in monocultures in 86-L tubs

165 containing 65 L of RO water. 65 mL of nitrate-free modified Hoagland solution (Hoagland & Arnon, 1950) containing calcium carbonate as source of dissolved inorganic carbon, and 166 supplying full strength macro- and micro-nutrients, as well as P (0.031 mg P-PO<sub>4</sub>  $L^{-1}$ ) and 167 ammonium (0.03 mg N-NH<sub>4</sub> L<sup>-1</sup>) was added to each tub. This represents a relatively 168 169 undisturbed lowland freshwater system (Hastwell, Daniel & Vivian-Smith, 2008). Five nitrate treatments (0.02, 0.05, 0.1, 0.5 and 0.9 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup>) were then established using 170 171 pre-prepared sodium nitrate stock solutions. Three replicate tubs for each nitrate treatment 172 were made up for each species, giving a total of 15 tubs per species (5 nitrate treatments x 3 173 replicates) and 45 tubs in total. Each tub contained 20 uniquely numbered plants of its 174 designated species giving 900 plants in total (15 tubs  $\times$  20 plants = 300 plants/species). 175 Egeria densa and V. spiralis were planted in individual pots (4.5 cm diameter and 6.5 cm 176 depth) containing near-inert washed gravel to ensure there were no sediment-based additional nutrients. The pots were arranged in the tubs in a checkerboard design using pot trays 177 178 (Supplementary Figure 1). Similarly, individual S. molesta plants were separated by floating 179 pot trays in a checkerboard arrangement. The initial plant spacing for all the species was 7.5 180  $cm \times 5$  cm. The shoot tips of the submerged species were 15 cm below the water surface.

181 Each tub was aerated continuously by bubbling using an 11 watt O<sub>2</sub> plus 4000 182 aquarium air pump (Aqua One, Ingleburn, NSW, Australia) connected to a SMXY 2835 183 Serenity Aquatics sponge filter (Aqua Blue Distribution, Loganholme, QLD, Australia) by a 184 2 m air tube. This was done to mimic flowing water and to avoid oxygen or carbon dioxide 185 limitation. Evaporation losses were compensated for daily by the addition of RO water. Twice weekly, nutrient analyses of water samples from each tub were conducted following 186 187 APHA (1998) protocol and nutrient levels adjusted as necessary to maintain a fairly constant 188 level of nitrates (Supplementary Figure 2), ammonium and P in each treatment/tub. On a 189 weekly basis, each tub was provided with 65 mL of iron as chelated EDTA. Other macro- and

190 micro-nutrient levels were adjusted once every two weeks based on the results of qualitative 191 analyses. Three times each week, the pH of the nutrient medium in the tubs was checked 192 using a portable HI 9125 pH/ORP pH meter (Hanna Instruments, Woonsocket, RI, USA) and 193 adjusted as required using sodium hydroxide and weak sulphuric acid solutions to maintain it 194 at between seven and eight. The pH of the growth medium on day three of the experiment 195 ranged between 6.16 and 6.72, 5.69 and 5.81, and 6.22 and 6.33 for E. densa, S. molesta and V. spiralis respectively. It mostly remained between 6.51 and 7.56 across the treatments and 196 197 species throughout the experiment. Once a week, ultraviolet (UV) sterilisation of the nutrient 198 medium in each tub was conducted for approximately four minutes using a ClearTec UV-C 199 sterilization unit (Pond One, Ingleburn, NSW, Australia) to mimic flowing waters that 200 normally experience less phytoplankton build-up.

## 201 Plant harvesting and measurement

202 On a weekly basis, three plants from each tub (nine plants/treatment/species) were 203 randomly selected and harvested until the end of the experiment. The remaining two plants in 204 each tub at the end of the experiment were initially planted to act as insurance against 205 possible mortality and were therefore not included in the final harvest. Once harvested, shoot 206 length of E. densa and leaf number of S. modesta and V. spiralis were measured before the plants were oven-dried at 60°C for 48 hours, and weighed using an analytical electronic 207 208 balance. The initial and final dry weights were then used to calculate the cumulative relative 209 growth rate (RGR) of each plant as follows:

# 210 $RGR = (lnW_2 - lnW_1)/T$ where $W_1$ was the initial dry weight, $W_2$ was the final dry 211 weight and T was the length of the growth period (days).

The process of obtaining foliar N content described above was repeated for each plantharvested at the final harvest.

#### 214 Data analyses

215 We used repeated measures Linear Mixed Models to analyse the effect of nitrate 216 treatment on relative growth rates (RGR) of all the species, percentage increase in E. densa 217 shoot length, percentage increase in the number of V. spiralis leaves, and the total number of 218 leaves produced by S. molesta. Nitrate concentration and time were used as fixed factors with 219 time nested as a repeated co-variable, and tub identity as the random factor. Between-species 220 differences in RGR of plants grown under each N concentration were similarly analysed 221 using the repeated measures Linear Mixed Model with species as a fixed factor, time nested 222 as a repeated co-variable and tub identity as the random factor. Repeated measure covariance 223 type was selected based on the smallest Akaike's Information Criterion. With data split by 224 species, pairwise comparisons of estimated marginal means with Bonferroni adjustment were 225 used to examine within-species differences in RGR response to nitrate treatments. Similarly, between-species RGR responses to each level of nitrate concentration were compared after 226 227 splitting the data by nitrate treatment. We used the Least Significant Differences (LSD) to 228 compare within-species differences in shoot length change (*E. densa*), leaf number change 229 (V. spiralis) and total number of leaves produced (S. molesta).

The initial and final foliar C and N content values were converted to molar mass ratios. One-way ANOVAs were then used to analyse the differences in foliar C:N content of the species and chlorophyll-*a* concentration in the wash water and water column across the treatments. Species identity and nitrate concentration were treated as the fixed factors for the initial and final values. When necessary Tukey HSD post-hoc analyses were used to examine differences among species and nitrate concentrations

All statistical analyses were performed using SPSS statistical software, version 25
(IBM, Chicago, IL, USA) with the significance level set at 0.05. When necessary to satisfy

- requirements for normality and fulfil the assumptions of models, data were transformed totheir log<sub>10</sub>.
- 240

241 **Results** 

242	There was no significant interaction between nitrate treatment and time for any of the
243	species growth traits. As expected, time had a significant effect on all growth traits of each
244	species because the plants increased in size through time (Table 1; Table 2).

- 245 Nitrate treatment had a highly significant effect on the RGR of *E. densa* (Figure 2a;
- Table 1). Pairwise comparisons revealed that the plants grown at the lowest nitrate

247 concentration (0.02 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup>) had significantly lower mean RGR than plants grown in

248 0.1, 0.5, and 0.9 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup> by between 0.012 and 0.016 ( $\pm$  0.001 SE) mg mg<sup>-1</sup> day<sup>-1</sup> (all P

249 < 0.037). There were no significant differences in RGR of the plants grown in the other

250 nitrate treatments.

Similarly to *E. densa*, nitrate treatment had a highly significant effect on the cumulative RGR of *V. spiralis* (Figure 2b; Table 1). The mean RGR of plants grown in 0.5 and 0.9 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup> was 0.019 (±0.005 SE) and 0.016 (±0.005 SE) mg mg<sup>-1</sup> day<sup>-1</sup> higher than the RGR of plants grown in 0.02 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup> respectively (P = 0.001 and 0.01 respectively). However, there were no differences in RGR of the plants grown in the other nitrate concentrations.

- 257 **Table 1:** A summary table of repeated measures mixed effects model showing the effect of nitrate concentration and time on RGR of *E. densa*,
- 258 V. spiralis and S. molesta

	E. densa			V. spiralis				S. molesta		
	Numerator df	Denominator df	F	Р	Denominator df	F	Р	Denominator df	F	Р
[Nitrate]	4	49.017	5.328	0.001	57.866	5.280	0.001	49.827	3.824	0.009
Time	5	71.683	36.991	0.001	65.217	15.843	<0.001	61.019	9.852	<0.001
[Nitrate]*Time	20	71.694	1.177	0.299	65.217	1.352	0.179	61.019	1.054	0.418

260

**Table 2:** A summary table of repeated measures mixed effects model showing the effect of nitrate concentration and time on change in shoot

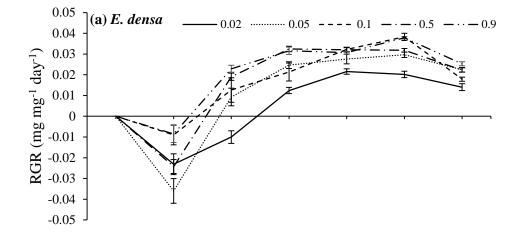
length of *E. densa*, change in number of leaves produced by *V. spiralis*, and the total number of leaves produced by *S. molesta* 

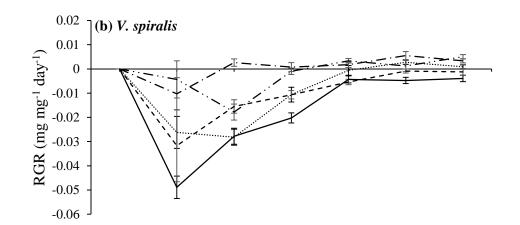
263

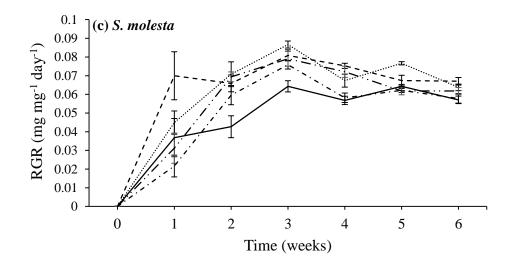
	<i>E. densa</i> shoot length change (%)				V. spiralis leaf No. change (%)			S. molesta leaf No.		
	Numerator df	Denominator df	F	Р	Denominator df	F	Р	Denominator df	F	Р
[Nitrate]	4	15	4.112	0.019	15	7.981	0.001	20.639	2.052	0.124
Time	5	255	38.372	<0.001	255	34.847	<0.001	98.599	144.080	<0.001
[Nitrate]*Time	20	255	1.352	0.147	255	1.558	0.063	98.599	0.979	0.493

The nitrate effect on the cumulative RGR of *S. molesta* was also significant (Figure 265 2c; Table 1). Pairwise comparisons showed that the RGR of plants grown in 0.1 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> 267  $L^{-1}$  was higher than that of plants grown in 0.02 N-NO<sub>3</sub>  $L^{-1}$  by 0.017 (±0.005 SE) mg mg<sup>-1</sup> 268 day<sup>-1</sup> (*P* = 0.026). There were no differences in RGR of plants grown in the other treatment 269 combinations.

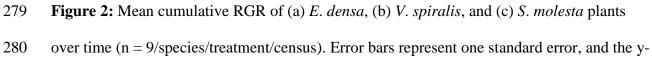
- 270 A comparison of the mean RGR of the three species across the nitrate treatments
- showed that the mean RGR of *S. molesta* was 287.5% higher than that of *E. densa* and 875%
- higher than that of V. spiralis (P < 0.001 at all nitrate levels in both cases). In comparison, the
- 273 mean RGR of *E. densa* was 300% higher than that of *V. spiralis* (*P* < 0.001 at all nitrate
- levels).
- 275

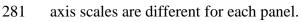






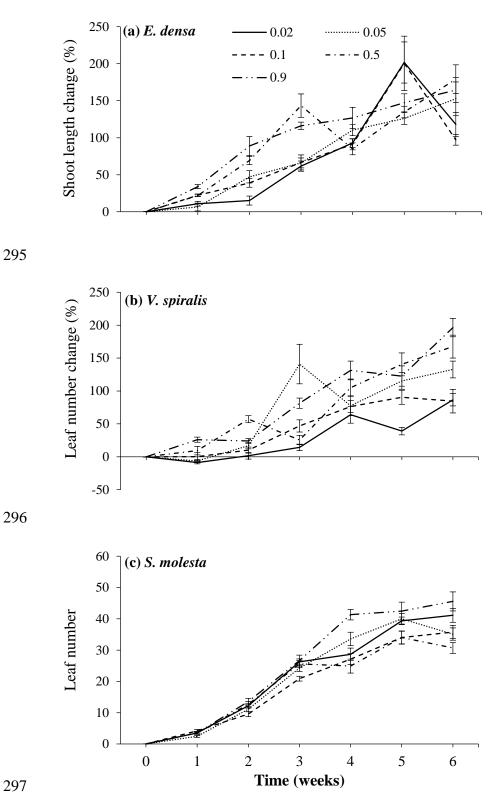






There was a significant effect of nitrate concentration on E. densa shoot length over 282 the growth period (Figure 3a; Table 2), with shoots of plants grown in 0.5 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub>  $L^{-1}$  on 283 average being 22.2% longer than those of plants grown in 0.02 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup> (P = 0.022). 284 Similarly, shoot lengths of plants grown in 0.9 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup> were on average 29.5, 28.1, and 285 26.8% longer than shoots of plants grown in 0.02, 0.05 and 0.1 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup> respectively (P 286 287 = 0.005, 0.017, and 0.015 respectively). The number of leaves produced by V. spiralis 288 through time was also influenced by nitrate concentration (Figure 3b; Table 2), with plants 289 grown in 0.05, 0.5 and 0.9 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub>  $L^{-1}$  respectively producing 48.7, 51.4, and 64.2% more leaves than those grown in 0.02 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup> (P = 0.005, 0.001, and P < 0.001290 291 respectively). Furthermore, the number of leaves produced by plants grown in 0.5 and 0.9 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup> was larger than the number of leaves produced by plants grown 0.1 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> l<sup>-1</sup> 292 by 32.7 and 45.5% respectively. Nitrate concentration did not have any effect on the number 293

of leaves produced by *S. molesta* (Figure 3c; Table 2).





298 Figure 3: Mean percentage change in (a) E. densa shoot length and (b) V. spiralis leaf 299 number, and (c) the mean number of S. molesta leaves produced over time (n =300 9/species/treatment/census). Error bars represent one standard error.

301	The initial mean foliar C:N of <i>E. densa</i> (11.38 $\pm$ 0.49 SE) and <i>V. spiralis</i> (12.19 $\pm$
302	0.87 SE) plants were not statistically different. However, the mean initial foliar C:N of S.
303	<i>molesta</i> plants (15.55 $\pm$ 0.32) was 36.6% higher than that of <i>E. densa</i> ( <i>P</i> < 0.001) and 27.7%
304	higher than that of V. spiralis ( $P = 0.002$ ). Nitrate treatment had a significant effect on the
305	final foliar C:N content of <i>E. densa</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>V. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>P. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>P. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>P. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>P. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>P. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>P. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4a) and <i>P. spiralis</i> ( $F_{4, 40} = 23.574$ ; <i>P. spiralis</i> (
306	$_{40}$ = 6.946; <i>P</i> < 0.001; Figure 4b). However, there was no nitrate effect on foliar C:N of <i>S</i> .
307	<i>molesta</i> at the final census ( $F_{4, 40} = 2.525$ ; $P = 0.056$ ; Figure 4c). Post-hoc tests showed that
308	the foliar C:N of <i>E. densa</i> plants grown in 0.5 and 0.9 mg N-NO <sub>3</sub> L <sup>-1</sup> were lower than of
309	those plants grown at the lower nitrate concentrations by between 23.3 and 57.4% (all $P <$
310	0.011). Foliar C:N of the plants grown in 0.02, 0.05 and 0.1 mg N-NO <sub>3</sub> $L^{-1}$ did not differ.
311	Final foliar C:N of V. spiralis plants grown in 0.02 mg N-NO <sub>3</sub> L <sup>-1</sup> was 15.7% higher than that
312	of plants grown in 0.9 mg N-NO <sub>3</sub> $L^{-1}$ ( <i>P</i> = 0.029). Similarly, the final C:N of plants grown in
313	$0.05 \text{ mg N-NO}_3 \text{ L}^{-1}$ were 20.4 and 25.4% higher than that of plants grown in 0.5 and 0.9 mg
314	N-NO <sub>3</sub> L <sup>-1</sup> respectively ( $P = 0.003$ and $P < 0.001$ respectively). The foliar C:N content of the
315	plants grown in the other treatments did not differ. Based on estimated marginal means, the
316	final foliar C:N of S. molesta was higher than that of E. densa and V. spiralis by 37.7 and
317	73.9% respectively ( $P < 0.001$ in both cases). In turn, the final C:N of <i>E. densa</i> was 26.3%
318	higher than that of V. spiralis ( $P < 0.001$ ).
210	

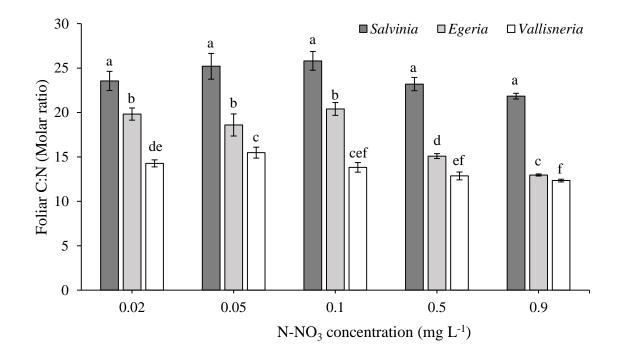


Figure 4: Mean foliar C:N content of *E. densa*, *V. spiralis*, and *S. molesta* plants at the end of
the experiment (n = 9/species). Error bars represent one standard error; letters above error
bars indicate significant differences between the different treatments and species.

320

Nitrate treatment did not affect the periphytic algal density on *E. densa* and *V. spiralis* plants (Supplementary Figure 3a and b respectively). However, the amount of phytoplankton in the water column differed with nitrate treatment for *E. densa* ( $F_{4, 10} = 41.99$ ; *P* < 0.001; Supplementary Figure 3c) and *V. spiralis* ( $F_{4, 10} = 4.28$ ; *P* = 0.028; Supplementary Figure 3d). The higher nitrate treatments had more phytoplankton than the lower treatments.

330

### 331 Discussion

A major threat to the structure and function of freshwater ecosystems globally is
eutrophication facilitating the invasion of exotic plants (Van, Wheeler & Center, 1999;
Daehler, 2003). The aim of this study was to compare the growth responses of common cooccurring invasive exotic and native freshwater plant species of the Hawkesbury-Nepean

River system, NSW, Australia to a range of low additional nitrate doses. As predicted, growth
responses of the invasive exotic *E. densa* (RGR and shoot length) and native *V. spiralis*(RGR and number of leaves) were stimulated by the higher nitrate concentrations. In contrast, *S. molesta* had the highest RGR at mid-range nitrate concentration of 0.1 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup>. As
predicted, the two invasive exotic species had at least an order of magnitude faster RGR than
the native *V. spiralis*.

342 The increased growth response of *E. densa* plants (RGR and shoot length) at the 343 higher nitrate concentrations was expected because N is a major requirement for plant growth 344 (Bracken et al., 2015). Stimulation of growth at high N concentrations has been reported for other closely related species Elodea canadensis (Canadian waterweed) and E. nuttalli 345 (Nuttall's waterweed) (Ozimek, van Donk & Gulati, 1993; Barker et al., 2008). However, E. 346 347 densa has also been shown to grow well irrespective of the amount of nitrate available. For 348 example, Mony et al. (2007) observed that biomass production in E. densa did not differ at N concentrations ranging from 0 - 0.6 g N kg<sup>-1</sup> of sediment. This suggests that *E. densa* has 349 350 context dependent response to nitrate concentrations and may be competitively superior 351 under oligotrophic conditions.

352 The RGR and leaf production of the native V. spiralis were stimulated by the higher 353 nitrate concentrations, albeit marginally compared to E. densa. This finding is consistent with 354 that of Li, Zhang and Jeppesen (2008) who found that V. spinulosa biomass increased with increasing nitrate concentrations of up to 7.5 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup>. However, it has been reported 355 356 that V. spiralis typically favours nutrient-poor conditions (Bolpagni et al., 2015). For 357 example, studies of other Vallisneria species such as V. natans (Yu et al., 2015) and V. 358 spinulosa (Zhao et al., 2016) have reported a decline in their growth rates with increasing N 359 concentrations. It should be noted that initially V. spiralis plants experienced some leaf

360 dieback possibly as a result of leaf tip trimming to control for initial plant size and depth of 361 submergence. Although the trimming may have resulted in biomass losses initially, it did not 362 interfere with the meristems that lie in the rosette at the basal area of the leaves enabling the 363 plants to maintain growth. Leaf trimming is a common water garden industry practice for 364 stimulating V. spiralis growth (Austral Watergardens, pers. comm). Similar plant preparation 365 methods have been used for V. americana (Blanch, Ganf & Walker, 1998; Kennedy, Horth & Carr, 2009) and V. natans (Yu et al., 2015). Moreover, it has been shown that V. spiralis 366 367 exhibited compensatory growth and regained up to 108% biomass within four weeks in response to partial leaf removal when supplied with total N of 5 mg N L<sup>-1</sup> (Li, Liu & Gu, 368 369 2010). Considering the results of RGR, it seemingly took comparatively longer for V. 370 spiralis plants in our experiment to recover from the trimming and begin growth.

371 In contrast to E. densa and V. spiralis, RGR of S. molesta plants was highest under mid-range nitrate concentration of 0.1 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup> and nitrate treatment did not affect their 372 373 leaf production. However, irrespective of nitrate concentration, S. molesta had the highest 374 RGR of our study species. Studies have shown S. molesta to grow well under a range of N 375 concentrations (Toerien et al., 1983; Henry-Silva, Camargo & Pezzato, 2008). For example, 376 previous studies have reported significant increases in S. molesta growth rates at N concentrations ranging from 0.02 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup> (Cary & Weerts, 1983; Room & Gill, 1985) 377 up to 20 mg NH<sub>4</sub>-N l<sup>-1</sup> (e.g. Cary & Weerts, 1983; Madsen & Wersal, 2008). This prolific 378 379 growth of S. molesta irrespective of N concentration has often been observed when the apical 380 bud is removed which triggers a rapid growth of the other buds (Julien & Bourne, 1986). 381 Since all our plants were obtained from rhizome sections without the apical buds, growth 382 overcompensation may have resulted in the observed rapid growth of the plants. Moreover, S. *molesta* is a known serious invader that grows rapidly to colonise space. While it may be 383 384 argued that nutrient uptake mechanisms in S. molesta may differ from that of the submerged

species due to its free-floating growth form, it has been demonstrated that submerged species
are similarly capable of satisfying their mineral requirements by leaf uptake alone (Madsen &
Cedergreen, 2002).

388 The two exotic invasive species had at least an order of magnitude faster RGR than 389 the native V. spiralis which could be attributed to differences in CO<sub>2</sub> availability and their 390 photosynthetic pathways. The low diffusive rate of CO<sub>2</sub> in water and the large boundary layer 391 around leaves of submerged freshwater plant species could greatly limit photosynthesis and 392 consequently their growth rates (Maberly & Madsen, 2002). In addition, availability of 393 dissolved inorganic carbon (DIC) depends to a large extent on the pH of the water and CO<sub>2</sub> 394 transfer velocity (Maberly et al., 2015; Hasler et al., 2016). We continuously bubbled 395 atmospheric air into the water column to enhance CO<sub>2</sub> dissolution. We also regularly adjusted 396 the pH to slightly above 7, which may have tipped the dominance of the available DIC 397 species towards HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> (Pedersen, Colmer & Sand-Jensen, 2013). As a species that utilises 398 atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub>, S. molesta is less affected by DIC content of the water column unlike the 399 submerged species. Egeria densa is capable of taking up both CO<sub>2</sub> and HCO<sub>3</sub><sup>-</sup> in addition to 400 having C<sub>4</sub> carbon concentrating mechanism (CCM) (Casati, Lara & Andreo, 2000; Pierini & 401 Thomaz, 2004). It could therefore be argued that the higher RGR of the exotic invasive 402 species relative to V. spiralis was a result of asymmetric access to CO<sub>2</sub> for photosynthesis. 403 Although it is unclear whether V. spiralis is capable of utilising  $HCO_3^-$  similar to other 404 members of the genus, it has been shown to have CAM-like CCM that aids it overcome DIC 405 limitation (Webb, Rattray & Brown, 1988). It is therefore unlikely that the difference between the RGR of V. spiralis and those of the exotic invasive species may have been a 406 407 result of differential CO<sub>2</sub> limitation.

408 Results of nutrient analyses showed that the initial foliar C:N of E. densa and V. 409 spiralis did not differ whereas S. molesta had a higher foliar C:N ratio. Tissue nutrient 410 content of freshwater plants is generally positively correlated with nutrient availability 411 (Cronin & Lodge, 2003; Bakker & Nolet, 2014; Velthuis et al., 2017). This suggests that the 412 sites from which the experimental E. densa and V. spiralis plants were obtained had a similar 413 nutrient status. The comparatively higher initial C:N in S. molesta could be reflective of the 414 importance of structural C in free-floating species relative to the C associated with metabolic 415 compounds (Duarte, 1992), and may not necessarily suggest that the species was from a 416 comparatively nutrient-poor site. Nevertheless, it is highly likely that the exotic invasive 417 species were not advantaged over the native V. spiralis by N stored in their tissue prior to the 418 experiment.

419 The effect of nitrate treatment on the molar ratio of foliar C and N content of S. 420 molesta at the end of the experiment was not significant. This observation supports our earlier 421 argument that S. molesta grows rapidly regardless of nutrient status of its growth medium 422 (Toerien et al., 1983; Henry-Silva, Camargo & Pezzato, 2008). Compared to the submerged species, S. molesta had the highest C:N across the N treatments. This could also be related to 423 424 its rapid growth rate that may have led to accelerated conversion of nutrients (including N) 425 into growth (McJannet, Keddy & Pick, 1995). Egeria densa and V. spiralis plants displayed a 426 pattern of lower foliar C:N with increasing nitrate concentration. This was expected as an 427 increase in foliar N content (reduced C:N ratio) with increasing N availability among 428 freshwater plants has been demonstrated (Cronin & Lodge, 2003; Bakker & Nolet, 2014; 429 Velthuis *et al.*, 2017), although the relationship may be linked more strongly to species 430 identity and less to habitat nutrient status (Demars & Edwards, 2007; Frost & Hicks, 2012). 431 There were marginal increases in the final foliar C:N ratio across all our study species 432 relative to the initial values. This may be a result of suboptimal N supply in our experiment.

Nitrate effect on species growth

Another explanation for the increased foliar C:N ratio through time may be that the trimming
of the species meant they had to use stored N to stimulate initial growth (Ferraro &
Oesterheld, 2002). However, the mean final foliar N content of all experimental plants across
the different nitrate treatments was above the 1.3% suggested critical threshold (Gerloff &
Krombholz, 1966) and similar to the 2.4% observed by Duarte (1992).
We found no evidence that periphyton or phytoplankton had a differential suppressing

effect on the growth of the plants although the phytoplankton concentration in the higher N
treatments of *E. densa* and *V. spiralis* increased during the intervals between UV
sterilisations relative to the lower N treatments. It has been shown that some freshwater plant
species, such as *E. densa*, can adversely affect phytoplankton by competing for nutrients and
producing allelopathic chemicals (Vanderstukken *et al.*, 2011). Therefore, we can conclude
that the differences in growth among our species were largely a result of nitrate treatment and
not periphyton or phytoplankton load.

446 Although growth responses to nitrate availability in our study were species-specific, 447 we found that irrespective of nitrate availability, the invasive exotic species had stronger 448 growth responses than the native V. spiralis which took longer to recover from the trimming 449 shock. Many studies have shown that invasive exotic freshwater plants perform better than 450 natives under similar environmental conditions (Hastwell, Daniel & Vivian-Smith, 2008) due 451 to their more flexible resource use capabilities (Kennedy, Horth & Carr, 2009). Our results 452 are consistent with the observation that although nutrient-rich habitats may experience more 453 invasions (Daehler, 2003), resource-poor habitats do get invaded as well (Funk & Vitousek, 454 2007). Therefore, in the short term, we can expect the invasive exotic E. densa and S. molesta 455 to perform better than V. spiralis in natural freshwater ecosystems with N concentrations of between 0.02 - 0.9 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup> when other resources such as P are not limited. However, 456

there is a need for more studies with multiple species in the invasive vs native categories to
assess the performance of these freshwater plants under oligotrophic conditions in the longterm.

460

### 461 Acknowledgements

462 Sydney Water and Macquarie University provided funding for this project. We thank 463 the staff at the Sydney Water laboratories for analyses of water samples. We are also most 464 grateful to Paul Marynissen (Wyong Council) and Jamie Devine (Sydney Water) for their 465 effort in obtaining the plant propagules and to Sally Spedding (Sydney Water) for organising and coordinating the logistics of water sample collection. We also thank Jose Gonzalez 466 (Sydney Water) for providing and setting up equipment such as the UV sterilization units. 467 468 We could not have done this without the invaluable inputs of Brian Atwell and Muhammad 469 Masood at Macquarie University. We are indebted to Elisabeth Gross and three anonymous 470 reviewers for their invaluable comments.

471

#### 472 **References**

473	Al-Hamdani S.H. & Sirna C.B. (2008) Physiological responses of Salvinia minima to
474	different phosphorus and nitrogen concentrations. American Fern Journal, 98, 71-82.
475	Apha. (1998) Standard methods for the examination of water and wastewater. Washington,
476	DC.
477	Aston H.I. (1973) Aquatic plants of Australia : a guide to the identification of the aquatic
478	ferns and flowering plants of Australia, both native and naturalized / Helen I. Aston ;
479	illustrations chiefly by the author, Carlton, Vic : Melbourne University Press, Carlton
480	Vic.

- Bakker E.S. & Nolet B.A. (2014) Experimental evidence for enhanced top-down control of
  freshwater macrophytes with nutrient enrichment. *Oecologia*, **176**, 825-836.
- Barker T., Hatton K., O'connor M., Connor L. & Moss B. (2008) Effects of nitrate load on
  submerged plant biomass and species richness: results of a mesocosm experiment.
- 485 *Fundamental and Applied Limnology/Archiv für Hydrobiologie*, **173**, 89-100.
- 486 Blanch S.J., Ganf G.G. & Walker K.F. (1998) Growth and recruitment in Vallisneria
- 487 *americana* as related to average irradiance in the water column. *Aquatic Botany*, **61**,
  488 181-205.
- 489 Bolpagni R., Laini A., Soana E., Tomaselli M. & Nascimbene J. (2015) Growth performance
- 490 of *Vallisneria spiralis* under oligotrophic conditions supports its potential
- 491 invasiveness in mid-elevation freshwaters. *Weed Research*, **55**, 185-194.
- Bornette G. & Puijalon S. (2011) Response of aquatic plants to abiotic factors: a review. *Aquatic Sciences*, **73**, 1-14.
- 494 Bracken M.E., Hillebrand H., Borer E.T., Seabloom E.W., Cebrian J., Cleland E.E., Elser J.J.,
- Gruner D.S., Harpole W.S. & Ngai J.T. (2015) Signatures of nutrient limitation and
  co-limitation: responses of autotroph internal nutrient concentrations to nitrogen and
- 497 phosphorus additions. *Oikos*, **124**, 113-121.
- Brodie J.E. & Mitchell A.W. (2005) Nutrients in Australian tropical rivers: Changes with
  agricultural development and implications for receiving environments. *Marine and Freshwater Research*, 56, 279-302.
- 501 Cary P.R. & Weerts P.G. (1983) Growth of *Salvinia molesta* as affected by water temperature
  502 and nutrition I. Effects of nitrogen level and nitrogen compounds. *Aquatic Botany*, 16,
  503 163-172.
- Casati P., Lara M.V. & Andreo C.S. (2000) Induction of a C<sub>4</sub>-like mechanism of CO<sub>2</sub> fixation
  in *Egeria densa*, a submersed aquatic species. *Plant Physiology*, **123**, 1611-1622.

506	Ceschin S., Abati S., Leacche I. & Zuccarello V. (2017) Ecological comparison between
507	duckweeds in central Italy: The invasive Lemna minuta vs the native L. minor. Plant
508	Biosystems - An International Journal Dealing with all Aspects of Plant Biology, 1-
509	10.
510	Cronin G. & Lodge D.M. (2003) Effects of light and nutrient availability on the growth,
511	allocation, carbon/nitrogen balance, phenolic chemistry, and resistance to herbivory of
512	two freshwater macrophytes. Oecologia, 137, 32-41.
513	Curt M., Curt G., Aguado P. & Fernandez J. (2010) Proposal for the biological control of
514	Egeria densa in small reservoirs: a Spanish case study. Journal of Aquatic Plant
515	Management (JAPM), 48, 124.
516	Daehler C.C. (2003) Performance comparisons of co-occurring native and alien invasive
517	plants: Implications for conservation and restoration. Annual Review of Ecology,
518	Evolution, and Systematics, 34, 183-211.
519	Demars B.O. & Edwards A. (2007) Tissue nutrient concentrations in freshwater aquatic
520	macrophytes: high inter-taxon differences and low phenotypic response to nutrient
521	supply. Freshwater Biology, 52, 2073-2086.
522	Duarte C.M. (1992) Nutrient concentration of aquatic plants: Patterns across species.
523	Limnology and Oceanography, <b>37</b> , 882-889.
524	Elser J.J., Kyle M., Steger L., Nydick K.R. & Baron J.S. (2009) Nutrient availability and
525	phytoplankton nutrient limitation across a gradient of atmospheric nitrogen
526	deposition. <i>Ecology</i> , <b>90</b> , 3062-3073.
527	Ferraro D.O. & Oesterheld M. (2002) Effect of defoliation on grass growth. A quantitative
528	review. Oikos, <b>98</b> , 125-133.
529	Flores-Moreno H., Reich P.B., Lind E.M., Sullivan L.L., Seabloom E.W., Yahdjian L.,
530	Macdougall A.S., Reichmann L.G., Alberti J., Báez S., Bakker J.D., Cadotte M.W.,

531	Caldeira M.C., Chaneton E.J., D'antonio C.M., Fay P.A., Firn J., Hagenah N., Harpole
532	W.S., Iribarne O., Kirkman K.P., Knops J.M.H., La Pierre K.J., Laungani R., Leakey
533	A.D.B., Mcculley R.L., Moore J.L., Pascual J. & Borer E.T. (2016) Climate modifies
534	response of non-native and native species richness to nutrient enrichment.
535	Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society B: Biological Sciences, 371.
536	Frost P.C. & Hicks Andrea l. (2012) Human shoreline development and the nutrient
537	stoichiometry of aquatic plant communities in Canadian Shield lakes. Canadian
538	Journal of Fisheries and Aquatic Sciences, 69, 1642-1650.
539	Funk J.L. & Vitousek P.M. (2007) Resource-use efficiency and plant invasion in low-
540	resource systems. <i>Nature</i> , <b>446</b> , 1079-1081.
541	Gérard J., Brion N. & Triest L. (2014) Effect of water column phosphorus reduction on
542	competitive outcome and traits of Ludwigia grandiflora and L. peploides, invasive
543	species in Europe. Aquatic Invasions, 9, 157-166.
544	Gerloff G.C. & Krombholz P.H. (1966) Tissue analysis as a measure of nutrient availability
545	for the growth of angiosperm aquatic plants 1. Limnology and Oceanography, 11,
546	529-537.

- 547 Hasler C.T., Butman D., Jeffrey J.D. & Suski C.D. (2016) Freshwater biota and rising pCO<sub>2</sub>?
  548 *Ecology Letters*, **19**, 98-108.
- 549 Hastwell G.T., Daniel A.J. & Vivian-Smith G. (2008) Predicting invasiveness in exotic
- species: do subtropical native and invasive exotic aquatic plants differ in their growth
  responses to macronutrients? *Diversity and Distributions*, 14, 243-251.
- Henry-Silva G.G., Camargo A.F. & Pezzato M.M. (2008) Growth of free-floating aquatic
  macrophytes in different concentrations of nutrients. *Hydrobiologia*, **610**, 153.
- Hilt S., Gross E.M., Hupfer M., Morscheid H., Mählmann J., Melzer A., Poltz J., Sandrock
- 555 S., Scharf E.-M. & Schneider S. (2006) Restoration of submerged vegetation in

- shallow eutrophic lakes–A guideline and state of the art in Germany. *Limnologica- Ecology and Management of Inland Waters*, **36**, 155-171.
- Hoagland D.R. & Arnon D.I. (1950) The water-culture method for growing plants without
  soil. *Circular. California Agricultural Experiment Station*, 347.
- 560 Howell J. & Benson D. (2000) Predicting potential impacts of environmental flows on weedy
- riparian vegetation of the Hawkesbury–Nepean River, south-eastern Australia. *Austral Ecology*, 25, 463-475.
- Hussner A. (2009) Growth and photosynthesis of four invasive aquatic plant species in
  Europe. *Weed Research*, 49, 506-515.
- Jones J.I., Young J.O., Eaton J.W. & Moss B. (2002) The influence of nutrient loading,
- dissolved inorganic carbon and higher trophic levels on the interaction between
  submerged plants and periphyton. *Journal of Ecology*, **90**, 12-24.
- Julien M.H. & Bourne A.S. (1986) Compensatory branching and changes in nitrogen content
  in the aquatic weed *Salvinia molesta* in response to disbudding. *Oecologia*, **70**, 250257.
- Kennedy T.L., Horth L.A. & Carr D.E. (2009) The effects of nitrate loading on the invasive
  macrophyte *Hydrilla verticillata* and two common, native macrophytes in Florida.
- 573 *Aquatic Botany*, **91**, 253-256.
- 574 Li K., Liu Z. & Gu B. (2010) Compensatory growth of a submerged macrophyte (Vallisneria
- *spiralis*) in response to partial leaf removal: effects of sediment nutrient levels.
- 576 *Aquatic Ecology*, **44**, 701-707.
- 577 Li W., Zhang Z. & Jeppesen E. (2008) The response of Vallisneria spinulosa
- 578 (Hydrocharitaceae) to different loadings of ammonia and nitrate at moderate
- 579 phosphorus concentration: a mesocosm approach. *Freshwater Biology*, **53**, 2321-
- 580 2330.

- Longstreth D.J. (1989) Photosynthesis and photorespiration in freshwater emergent and
  floating plants. *Aquatic Botany*, 34, 287-299.
- Maberly S.C., Berthelot S.A., Stott A.W. & Gontero B. (2015) Adaptation by macrophytes to
  inorganic carbon down a river with naturally variable concentrations of CO2. *Journal of Plant Physiology*, **172**, 120-127.
- 586 Maberly S.C. & Madsen T.V. (2002) Freshwater angiosperm carbon concentrating
- 587 mechanisms: processes and patterns. *Functional Plant Biology*, **29**, 393-405.
- 588 Madsen J.D. & Wersal R.M. (2008) Growth regulation of *Salvinia molesta* by pH and
- available water column nutrients. *Journal of Freshwater Ecology*, **23**, 305-313.
- Madsen T.V. & Cedergreen N. (2002) Sources of nutrients to rooted submerged macrophytes
  growing in a nutrient-rich stream. *Freshwater Biology*, 47, 283-291.
- Mcjannet C., Keddy P. & Pick F. (1995) Nitrogen and phosphorus tissue concentrations in 41
  wetland plants: a comparison across habitats and functional groups. *Functional Ecology*, 9, 231-238.
- 595 Mony C., Koschnick T., Haller W. & Muller S. (2007) Competition between two invasive
- •
- 596 Hydrocharitaceae (*Hydrilla verticillata* (Lf)(Royle) and *Egeria densa* (Planch)) as
- 597 influenced by sediment fertility and season. *Aquatic Botany*, **86**, 236-242.
- 598 Moss B., Jeppesen E., Søndergaard M., Lauridsen T.L. & Liu Z. (2013) Nitrogen,
- 599 macrophytes, shallow lakes and nutrient limitation: resolution of a current
  600 controversy? *Hydrobiologia*, **710**, 3-21.
- Njambuya J., Stiers I. & Triest L. (2011) Competition between *Lemna minuta* and *Lemna minor* at different nutrient concentrations. *Aquatic Botany*, 94, 158-164.
- 603 Ozimek T., Van Donk E. & Gulati R.D. (1993) Growth and nutrient uptake by two species of
- 604 *Elodea* in experimental conditions and their role in nutrient accumulation in a
- 605 macrophyte-dominated lake. In: *Nutrient Dynamics and Retention in Land/Water*

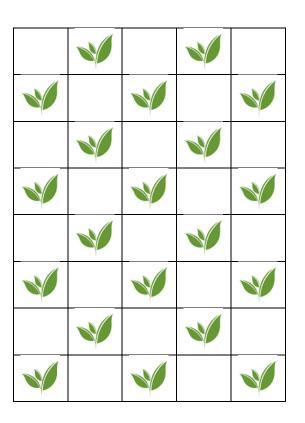
606	Ecotones of Lowland, Temperate Lakes and Rivers. (Eds A. Hillbricht-Ilkowska & E.
607	Pieczyńska), pp. 13-18. Springer Netherlands, Dordrecht.
608	Pedersen O., Colmer T.D. & Sand-Jensen K. (2013) Underwater Photosynthesis of
609	submerged plants – Recent advances and methods. Frontiers in Plant Science, 4, 140.
610	Penuelas J., Poulter B., Sardans J., Ciais P., Van Der Velde M., Bopp L., Boucher O.,
611	Godderis Y., Hinsinger P. & Llusia J. (2013) Human-induced nitrogen-phosphorus
612	imbalances alter natural and managed ecosystems across the globe. Nature
613	Communications, 4, 2934.
614	Pierini S.A. & Thomaz S.M. (2004) Effects of inorganic carbon source on photosynthetic
615	rates of Egeria najas Planchon and Egeria densa Planchon (Hydrocharitaceae).
616	Aquatic Botany, <b>78</b> , 135-146.
617	Rahman M. & Salbe I. (1995) Modelling impacts of diffuse and point source nutrients on the
618	water quality of South Creek catchment. Environment International, 21, 597-603.
619	Roberts D.E., Church A. & Cummins S. (1999) Invasion of Egeria into the hawkesbury-
620	nepean river, Australia. Journal of Aquatic Plant Management, 37, 31-34.
621	Room P.M. & Gill J.Y. (1985) The chemical environment of Salvinia molesta Mitchell: Ionic
622	concentrations of infested waters. Aquatic Botany, 23, 127-135.
623	Sand-Jensen K., Riis T., Vestergaard O. & Larsen S.E. (2000) Macrophyte decline in Danish
624	lakes and streams over the past 100 years. Journal of Ecology, 88, 1030-1040.
625	Schindler D.W., Hecky R., Findlay D., Stainton M., Parker B., Paterson M., Beaty K., Lyng
626	M. & Kasian S. (2008) Eutrophication of lakes cannot be controlled by reducing
627	nitrogen input: results of a 37-year whole-ecosystem experiment. Proceedings of the
628	National Academy of Sciences, <b>105</b> , 11254-11258.
629	Schooler S.S., Salau B., Julien M.H. & Ives A.R. (2011) Alternative stable states explain
630	unpredictable biological control of Salvinia molesta in Kakadu. Nature, 470, 86-89.

- Thiébaut G., Gillard M. & Deleu C. (2016) Growth, regeneration and colonisation of Egeria
  densa fragments: the effect of autumn temperature increases. *Aquatic Ecology*, 50,
  175-185.
- Toerien D., Cary P., Finlayson C., Mitchell D. & Weerts P. (1983) Growth models for *Salvinia molesta. Aquatic Botany*, 16, 173-179.
- Van T.K., Wheeler G.S. & Center T.D. (1999) Competition between *Hydrilla verticillata* and
   *Vallisneria americana* as influenced by soil fertility. *Aquatic Botany*, **62**, 225-233.
- 638 Vanderstukken M., Mazzeo N., Van Colen W., Declerck S.A. & Muylaert K. (2011)
- Biological control of phytoplankton by the subtropical submerged macrophytes
- 640 *Egeria densa* and Potamogeton illinoensis: a mesocosm study. Freshwater Biology,
- **56,** 1837-1849.
- 642 Velthuis M., Van Deelen E., Van Donk E., Zhang P. & Bakker E.S. (2017) Impact of
- 643Temperature and Nutrients on Carbon: Nutrient Tissue Stoichiometry of Submerged
- 644 Aquatic Plants: An Experiment and Meta-Analysis. *Frontiers in Plant Science*, **8**.
- 645 Webb D.R., Rattray M.R. & Brown J.M.A. (1988) A preliminary survey for crassulacean
- acid metabolism (CAM) in submerged aquatic macrophytes in New Zealand. *New Zealand Journal of Marine and Freshwater Research*, 22, 231-235.
- Wersal R.M. & Madsen J.D. (2011) Influences of water column nutrient loading on growth
  characteristics of the invasive aquatic macrophyte *Myriophyllum aquaticum* (Vell.)
  Verdc. *Hydrobiologia*, 665, 93-105.
- Yin L., Li W., Madsen T.V., Maberly S.C. & Bowes G. (2017) Photosynthetic inorganic
  carbon acquisition in 30 freshwater macrophytes. *Aquatic Botany*, 140, 48-54.
- 653 Yu Q., Wang H.-Z., Li Y., Shao J.-C., Liang X.-M., Jeppesen E. & Wang H.-J. (2015) Effects
- 654 of high nitrogen concentrations on the growth of submersed macrophytes at moderate
- 655 phosphorus concentrations. *Water Research*, **83**, 385-395.

- 656 Zhao S., Yin L., Chang F., Olsen S., Søndergaard M., Jeppesen E. & Li W. (2016) Response
- of *Vallisneria spinulosa* (Hydrocharitaceae) to contrasting nitrogen loadings in
  controlled lake mesocosms. *Hydrobiologia*, **766**, 215-223.
- 659 Zimba P.V. & Hopson M.S. (1997) Quantification of epiphyte removal efficiency from
- submersed aquatic plants. *Aquatic Botany*, **58**, 173-179.

# 662 Supplementary materials

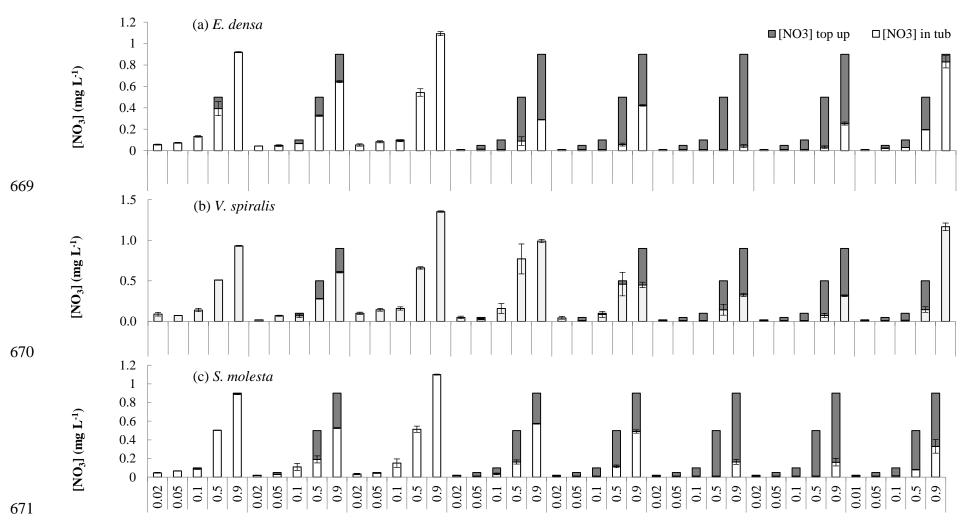
## 663

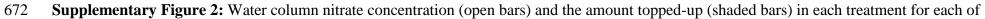


664

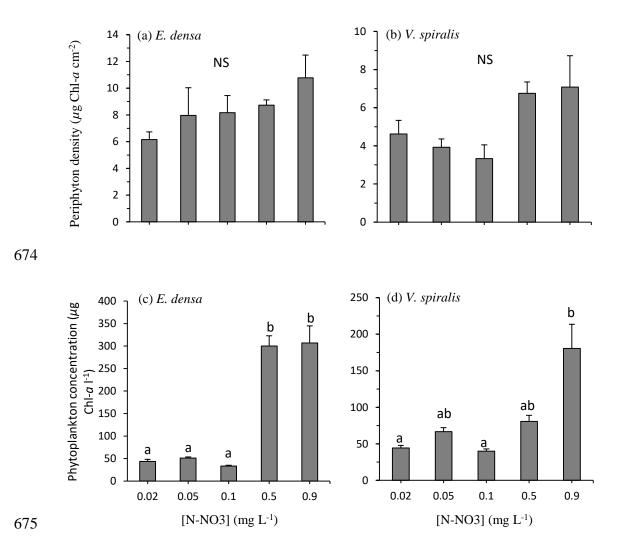
- 665 **Supplementary Figure 1:** A schematic diagram illustrating the checkerboard arrangement of
- the plants in their tubs at the start of the experiment.

667





673 the three study species on various dates during the course of the experiment.



Supplementary Figure 3: Mean periphytic microalgae density on shoot surfaces of (a) *E*. *densa* and (b) *V. spiralis*, and phytoplankton concentration in the water columns of (c) *E*. *densa* and (d) *V. spiralis* tubs a week after UV sterilization. Error bars represent one
standard error; letters above error bars indicate significant differences between groups and
NS indicates non-significant difference among plants of the different treatments.

# **CHAPTER FOUR**

Growth, reproduction and functional trait responses of three freshwater

plant species to elevated carbon dioxide.

Published as 'Gufu, G.D., Manea, A. & Leishman, M.R. (2019) Growth, reproduction and functional trait responses of three freshwater plant species to elevated carbon dioxide. *Aquatic Botany*, **154**, 18-23.'

My contribution to the research and paper: Concept – 90%; Data collection – 90%; Analysis – 100%; Writing – 90%

# 1 Abstract

Rising atmospheric CO <sub>2</sub> concentration ([CO <sub>2</sub> ]) is one of the most important ways
human activity is contributing to global change. It has led to climate-related changes that
affect physiological performance, phenology, and distributions of species globally. Elevated
[CO <sub>2</sub> ] enhances growth in many plant species through increased photosynthetic rates,
improved water and nitrogen use efficiency, and altered functional traits. In this study, we
investigated the growth, reproduction and functional trait responses to elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] of two
free-floating ferns, the native Azolla filiculoides (Azollaceae) and the exotic invasive Salvinia
molesta (Salviniaceae), and a submerged native angiosperm, Vallisneria spiralis
(Hydrocharitaceae). The species were grown in monocultures under ambient (~400 ppm) and
elevated (~600 ppm) [CO <sub>2</sub> ] in a glasshouse experiment. We found that A. filiculoides had
enhanced relative growth rate and reproduction under elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ]. However, its root to
shoot ratio was unaffected while its specific leaf area was reduced under elevated [CO2]. In
contrast, S. molesta and V. spiralis did not differ in their growth, reproduction or functional
trait responses between the CO <sub>2</sub> treatments. We conclude that freshwater plant responses to
elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] may vary across species, and that functional differences may play an
important role as exemplified by the strong response of the N-fixing A. filiculoides compared
to the non N-fixing species in this study. Future work should focus on the impact of elevated
CO <sub>2</sub> on plant growth in the context of environmental conditions such as pH, temperature and
light availability in freshwater systems.

21

Key words: *Azolla filiculoides*; free-floating species; invasive; *Salvinia molesta*; submerged; *Vallisneria spiralis*

# 25 Introduction

26	Rising atmospheric CO <sub>2</sub> concentration ([CO <sub>2</sub> ]) is one of the best documented global
27	changes of the past half century (Prentice et al., 2001). Over the past decade, atmospheric
28	[CO <sub>2</sub> ] has been rising steadily by about 2.1 ppm per year, reaching 400 ppm in 2015 (Betts et
29	al., 2016). Rising atmospheric [CO <sub>2</sub> ] is arguably one of the most important ways human
30	activity is contributing to global change (Low-Décarie, Fussmann & Bell, 2014). It has led to
31	climate-related changes such as temperature increases and altered precipitation patterns that
32	affect physiological performance, phenology, and distributions of many species globally
33	(Parmesan & Yohe, 2003).
34	In plants, elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] directly affects performance through higher photosynthetic
35	
	rates, improved water and nitrogen use efficiency, and altered functional traits (Poorter &
36	Navas, 2003; Leakey et al., 2009). As a result of these changes, plants often experience an
37	increase in growth if nutrient supply is not limiting (Poorter & Navas, 2003; Ainsworth &
38	Long, 2005) although the degree of their responsiveness is often species-specific and depends
39	largely on their functional group (Kimball, 1983). Despite an increasing number of studies
40	documenting the effects of CO <sub>2</sub> particularly on submerged plants (Bowes, 1993; Titus &
41	Andorfer, 1996; Maberly & Madsen, 2002; Hussner et al., 2014; Dülger et al., 2017),
42	freshwater plant species are still under-represented in this field of research compared to
43	terrestrial and marine species (Cheng et al., 2010; Cao & Ruan, 2015; Hasler et al., 2016).
44	Freshwater plant species are important sources of food and habitat for many
45	freshwater animals (Gross, Johnson & Hairston Jr, 2001) and in addition influence hydrology
46	and sediment dynamics of freshwater ecosystems (Vermaat, Santamaria & Roos, 2000).
47	Although these species can be indirectly affected by elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] through changes in
48	climate-associated environmental factors (Carpenter, Stanley & Vander Zanden, 2011), direct

49 CO<sub>2</sub> effects may be growth form-specific (Bornette & Puijalon, 2011). The growth and 50 functional trait responses of free-floating species are expected to be comparable to those of 51 terrestrial plants as they fix atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> for photosynthesis (Bowes, 1993). In contrast, 52 there is less agreement on how submerged species might respond to elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>]. Some 53 studies suggest that since most freshwater systems are supersaturated with CO2 (Raymond et 54 al., 2013), submerged freshwater plant species, most of which are not obligate free CO<sub>2</sub> users, 55 will be less responsive to elevated  $[CO_2]$  as long as  $HCO_3^-$  is available (Hasler *et al.*, 2016). 56 A contrary view is that due to the low diffusive rate of  $CO_2$  in water and the large boundary 57 layer around their leaves, submerged freshwater plant species are still carbon-limited even in 58 CO<sub>2</sub>-supersaturated waters (Maberly & Madsen, 2002). In agreement with the latter view, a 59 number of experimental studies have shown that submerged freshwater plant species respond 60 similarly to elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] as their terrestrial counterparts. These responses include increased 61 biomass production (Hussner et al., 2016; Dülger et al., 2017), leaf number (Spencer & 62 Bowes, 1986) and root to shoot ratio (Yan, Yu & Li, 2006; Hussner et al., 2014; Cao & 63 Ruan, 2015; Dülger et al., 2017) as well as reduced foliar N content (Yan, Yu & Li, 2006; Hussner et al., 2016). Because of these differences in opinions and empirical observations, it 64 65 is important that we continue to test how dominant freshwater plants will respond and adapt to changes in [CO<sub>2</sub>] at a species-level. This will enable us to gain a better understanding of 66 the full impact that rising atmospheric  $[CO_2]$  may have on the structure and function of 67 68 freshwater ecosystems globally.

In this study, we investigated the growth, reproduction, biomass allocation and
functional trait responses of two free-floating ferns, *Azolla filiculoides* (water fern;
Azollaceae) and *Salvinia molesta* (salvinia; Salviniaceae), and a submerged angiosperm, *Vallisneria spiralis* (eelgrass; Hydrocharitaceae) to elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>]. These species commonly
co-occur in freshwater ecosystems in south eastern Australia, with *S. molesta* being an

74 invasive exotic species while the other two are native. The free-floating ferns both belong to 75 the order Salvinales and fix atmospheric  $CO_2$  via the  $C_3$  pathway (Ray *et al.*, 1979). Azolla 76 *filiculoides* is a mat-forming species that hosts symbiotic N-fixing cyanobacteria Anabaena 77 azollae within its leaf cavities and is therefore not nitrogen-limited (Espinar et al., 2015). Salvinia molesta lacks true roots and utilises its highly dissected submerged leaves (roots 78 79 hereafter) and the underside of its floating leaves for nutrient uptake (Julien & Bourne, 1986). 80 *Vallisneria spiralis* on the other hand is considered a  $C_3$  plant that also employs a CAM-like 81 carbon concentrating mechanism (Helder & Van Harmelen, 1982; Webb et al., 1988; Keely, 82 1998; Yin et al., 2017) and is capable of taking up nutrients using both its leaves and roots 83 (Madsen & Cedergreen, 2002). It is further suggested that V. spiralis is capable of utilising both free  $CO_2$  and  $HCO_3^-$  like most submerged species (Hussner *et al.*, 2016). For all the 84 85 study species, asexual reproduction is the most common means of reproduction.

86 We measured growth (relative growth rate - RGR) and reproduction (surface area of 87 A. filiculoides mats, number of flowers and ramets produced by V. spiralis, and number of 88 buds produced by S. molesta), root to shoot ratio (R:S) as well as a range of functional traits 89 including specific leaf area (SLA) and foliar N content for each species grown under ambient 90 and elevated  $[CO_2]$ . We hypothesised that under elevated  $[CO_2]$  the free-floating species 91 would have enhanced growth and reproduction, greater R:S and reduced SLA and foliar N 92 content. Further, Azolla is likely to have a strong response to elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] as it is not 93 nitrogen limited due to its symbiotic cyanobacteria. In contrast, we predicted that the 94 submerged species, V. spiralis, would be less responsive to elevated CO<sub>2</sub> due to it partly 95 utilising the CAM photosynthetic pathway and not being an obligate free CO<sub>2</sub> user. 96

97

98

#### 99 Methods

### 100 **Plant collection and preparation**

101 Salvinia molesta plants were collected from a wild population at Lake Munmorah, Wyong, NSW, Australia (33.1923° S, 151.5749° E), A. filiculoides plants were collected 102 103 from an artificial pond at the Macquarie University Plant Growth Facility and V. spiralis 104 plants were sourced from a commercial supplier (Austral Watergardens, Cowan, NSW, 105 Australia). The plants were maintained in tubs containing tap water for three weeks before 106 being prepared for planting. For planting, apical rhizome sections consisting of four leaves 107 and a terminal bud for S. molesta ( $0.02 \pm 0.003$  g dry weight) and 1 g fresh weight portions of 108 A. filiculoides (0.04  $\pm$  0.002 g dry weight) were prepared while similar sized V. spiralis plants 109  $(0.71 \pm 0.3 \text{ g dry weight})$  were selected. A sub-sample of the plants prepared for planting (n = 110 20 per species) was oven-dried at 70°C for 48 hours and weighed using an analytical 111 electronic balance (Mettler Toledo, Port Melbourne, VIC, Australia) to determine the initial 112 mean dry weight of the experimental plants.

## 113 Experimental design

114 The experiment was conducted in glasshouses at the Plant Growth Facility of Macquarie University, North Ryde, NSW, Australia. We prepared 42 86-L transparent plastic 115 116 tubs containing 65 L of nutrient-free reverse osmosis (RO) water. Pre-prepared solutions of sodium nitrate and sodium phosphate were added to each tub to supply  $0.8 \text{ mg N-NO}_3 \text{ L}^{-1}$  and 117 0.1 mg P-PO<sub>4</sub>  $L^{-1}$ . The other nutrients were supplied by adding 15 mL of undiluted Seasol, a 118 119 nitrogen- and phosphorus-free organic concentrate (Seasol International Pty Ltd, Bayswater, 120 VIC, Australia), to each tub. We supplemented dissolved inorganic carbon (DIC) by adding 4.6 g of sodium hydrogen carbonate to each tub, similar to the amounts proposed by Smart 121 122 and Barko (1985). It was determined in a preliminary study that these quantities of nutrients

were ideal to promote the growth of the selected species. The tubs were evenly split between
two CO<sub>2</sub> treatments: ambient (380 – 420 ppm) and elevated (580 – 620 ppm) across four
glasshouses (two ambient and two elevated). We used 99.9% pure CO<sub>2</sub> beverage (BOC,
Wetherill Park, NSW, Australia) as the source of CO<sub>2</sub> in the glasshouses where the relevant
concentrations were maintained and monitored daily (6 am – 6 pm) by a CO<sub>2</sub> dosing and
monitoring system (Canary Company Pty Ltd, Lane Cove, NSW, Australia).

129 The temperature of the glasshouses was maintained at 27°C/22°C day/night producing water temperatures of 24°C/19°C day/night. This temperature range is consistent with the 130 131 mean summer water temperatures of the lower Hawkesbury River, NSW, Australia (Sydney Water, unpublished data) which is a freshwater system where the study species commonly 132 133 co-occur. The temperature, humidity (65-75%) and photosynthetically active radiation (PAR;  $283 \pm 102 \text{ }\mu\text{mol }\text{m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}$ , mean  $\pm$  SD at 2 pm) of the glasshouses were continuously monitored 134 135 using a Multi-grow Controller System (Autogrow Systems, Auckland, New Zealand). We did 136 not supplement the lighting since a pilot study showed that supplemental lighting of 300  $\mu$ mol m<sup>-2</sup> s<sup>-1</sup> caused photobleaching in *S. molesta*. 137

Each of the 42 tubs was designated to one of the three study species (14 tubs per species). Within each of the tubs, two plants of the species designated to that tub were planted (14 plants per species per CO<sub>2</sub> treatment). The free-floating species were kept separated in each tub using a floating polystyrene raft that divided the tub into two equal sectors (Figure 1a and b). Each *V. spiralis* plant was planted in a 25 x 20 x 5 cm porous plastic tray containing near-inert washed gravel (Figure 1c). Prior to planting, their leaves were loosely tagged with paper clips so we could distinguish the old and new leaves.

145

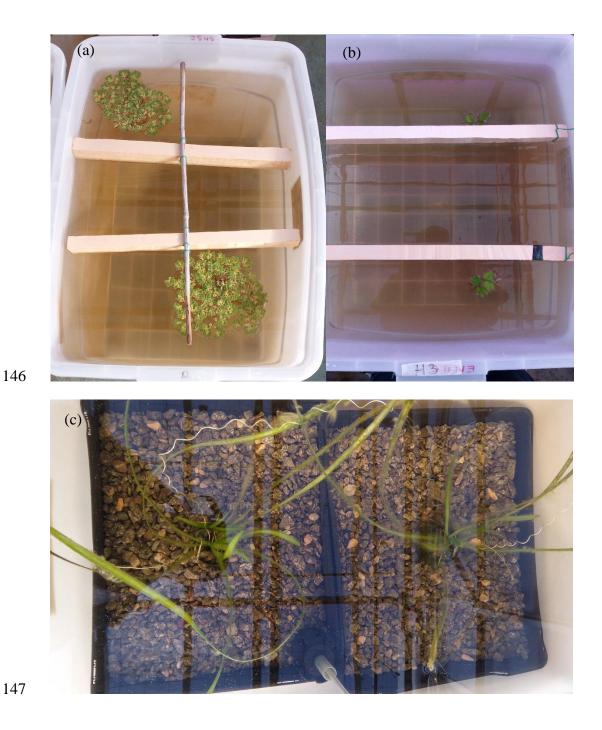


Figure 1: Photos of the experimental (a) *A. filiculoides*, (b) *S. molesta*, and (c) *V. spiralis*plants in their tubs. The photos were taken at different stages of plant growth. Initially, two
floating rafts were used to separate the *A. filiculodes* and *S. molesta* plants but these were
replaced by one raft each as the plants grew.

152 The tubs were thoroughly cleaned of periphytic algae and the nutrient medium was153 replaced with fresh medium on a fortnightly basis to simulate a dynamic system. At the times

154 of nutrient replacement, the plants were randomly moved between tubs within the same 155 glasshouse to reduce any within glasshouse effects. To mimic flowing waters and to air-156 equilibrate the tubs containing V. spiralis plants we continuously aerated the water using an 157 11 watt O2 plus 4000 aquarium air pump (Aqua One, Ingleburn, NSW, Australia) connected to a SMXY 2835 Serenity Aquatics sponge filter (Aqua Blue Distribution, Loganholme, 158 159 QLD, Australia) by a 2 m air tube. Aeration was not applied to the free-floating species since 160 an initial pilot study showed that bubbling caused A. *filiculoides* plants to disintegrate into 161 tiny fragments. Weekly monitoring of the V. spiralis tubs showed that the pH of the water 162 column was 7.4  $\pm$  0.2 and 7.25  $\pm$  0.2 (mean  $\pm$  SD) in the ambient and elevated CO<sub>2</sub> 163 treatments respectively.

### 164 Trait measurements and harvesting

165 The experiment was concluded after six weeks as the plant cover in some of the tubs 166 had reached 90%. Before harvesting, we measured vegetative reproduction of each species 167 with plant size (measured as the surface area covered by each plant), number of buds and 168 number of ramets being used for A. *filiculoides*, S. *molesta* and V. *spiralis* respectively. In 169 addition, flower number was used to measure sexual reproduction in V. spiralis. Other traits 170 measured included leaf number (S. molesta and V. spiralis), mean internode length and leaf 171 size (S. molesta; for five leaves across the size gradient in the plant), as well as maximum leaf 172 length (V. spiralis). Finally, the SLA of a portion of A. filiculoides fronds, and three fully 173 expanded S. molesta and V. spiralis leaves was calculated for each plant as leaf area divided 174 by leaf dry weight. Leaf area was measured using a LI-3100C Area Meter (Li-Cor, Lincoln, 175 NE, United States).

The plants were then harvested and separated into their shoot and root components.
The plant components were oven-dried at 70°C for 48 hours, and weighed using an analytical

178electronic balance. Foliar N content was then determined after grinding 0.5 g of dry shoot179biomass from each plant using a cross beater mill (Glen Creston, Stanmore, UK) and then180analysing these samples using combustion with a TruSpec CHN analyser (LECO, St Joseph,181MI, USA). R:S was calculated by dividing the dry weight of roots of each plant by the dry182weight of its shoot. RGR for each individual plant was then calculated as follows:183RGR = (lnW2-lnW1)/T, where W1 was the initial dry weight, W2 was the final dry184weight and T was the length of the growth period (days).

### 185 Statistical analysis

186 The CO<sub>2</sub> effect on the growth, reproduction and functional traits of each species was 187 separately assessed using one-way ANOVAs. When necessary, data were  $log_{10}$ -transformed 188 to meet the assumptions of ANOVA. All analyses were performed using SPSS statistical 189 software, version 25 (IBM, Chicago, IL, USA) and significance level set at *P* < 0.05. 190

### 191 **Results**

192 The experimental conditions were suitable for the species as even the slowest growing 193 species, *V. spiralis*, experienced a mean biomass gain of at least 118% relative to the initial 194 biomass. The data for the three species were analysed separately, with average trait values for 195 each species provided in Supplementary Table 1.

The RGR of *A. filiculoides* was significantly affected by CO<sub>2</sub> treatment (Figure 2a;
Table 1) with plants grown under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] having about 15% higher RGR than those
grown under ambient [CO<sub>2</sub>]. However, CO<sub>2</sub> treatment did not affect its R:S (Figure 2b; Table
1). In contrast there was a significant CO<sub>2</sub> effect on its SLA where the plants grown under
elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] experienced a 21% reduction in their SLA compared to the plants grown
under ambient [CO<sub>2</sub>] (Figure 2c; Table 1). The foliar N content of *A. filiculoides* was also

- 202 unaffected by CO<sub>2</sub> treatment (Figure 2d; Table 1). There was however a significant CO<sub>2</sub>
- 203 effect on mat surface area of A. *filiculoides* with plants grown under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] covering
- 43.2% more surface area of the tubs than plants grown under ambient [CO<sub>2</sub>] (Table 1).
- **Table 1:** A summary ANOVA table of the effect of [CO<sub>2</sub>] on the various traits of the study
- species (RGR = Relative Growth Rate; R:S = Root to shoot ratio; SLA = Specific Leaf Area;
- 207 DW = Dry weight). Significant effects are shown in bold while the dash symbol (-) indicates
- 208 where the trait value was not measured.

		Azolla filiculoides		Salvinia molesta		Vallisneria spiralis	
Trait	df	F	Р	F	Р	F	Р
RGR (mg mg <sup>-1</sup> day <sup>-1</sup> )	1, 26	27.427	<0.001	1.014	0.323	0.871	0.359
R:S (g/g)	1, 26	0.136	0.715	0.071	0.791	5.555	0.026
SLA (mm <sup>2</sup> mg <sup>-1</sup> )	1, 26	36.313	<0.001	2.797	0.106	0.260	0.614
N (% of dry mass)	1,26	0.878	0.357	0.288	0.596	0.326	0.573
Mat Surface Area (cm <sup>2</sup> )	1,26	23.053	<0.001	-	-	-	-
Leaf size (cm <sup>2</sup> )	1,26	-	-	0.405	0.530	-	-
Internode Length (mm)	1,26	-	-	4.093	0.053	-	-
Bud Number	1,26	-	-	0.294	0.592	-	-
Leaf Number	1,26	-	-	1.358	0.255	1.576	0.220
Ramet Number	1,26	-	-	-	-	0.099	0.756
Ramet DW (g)	1,26	-	-	-	-	1.180	0.287
Flower Number	1,26	-	-	-	-	1.029	0.320
Max. Leaf Length (cm)	1, 26	-	-	-	-	0.007	0.935

210 For S. molesta, CO<sub>2</sub> treatment did not have an effect on RGR, R:S, SLA, foliar N

211 content (Figure 2e – h respectively; Table 1) or any of the other traits (Table 1). Similarly,

212	[CO <sub>2</sub> ] did not affect the RGR of V. spiralis (Figure 2i; Table1) but significantly affected its
213	R:S (Figure 2j; Table 1). The mean R:S of the plants grown under elevated CO <sub>2</sub> was 16.2%
214	lower than that of the plants grown under ambient [CO <sub>2</sub> ]. There was no CO <sub>2</sub> effect on the
215	SLA, foliar N content (Figure 2k and l respectively; Table 1), the total number of leaves or
216	the maximum leaf length of V. spiralis (Table 1).
217	
218	
219	
220	
221	
222	
223	
224	
225	
226	
227	
228	

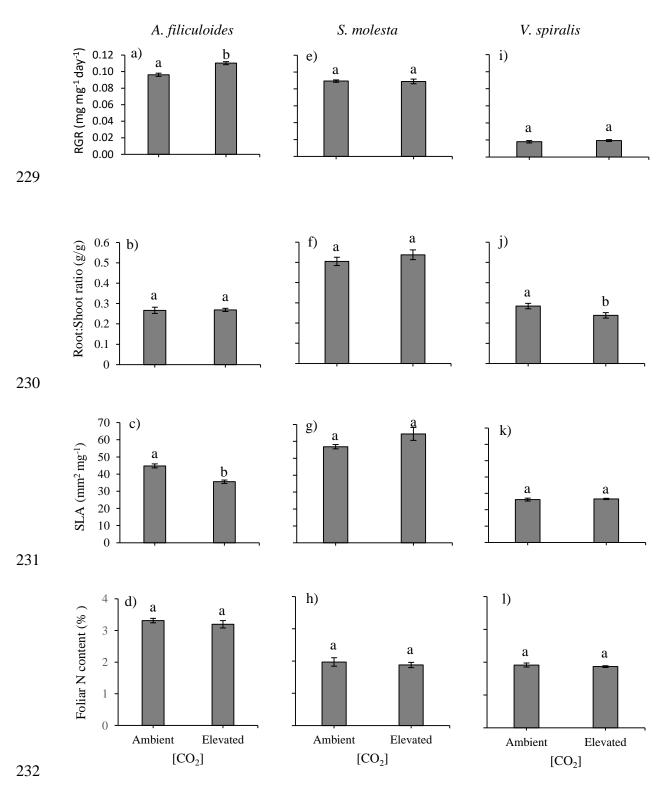


Figure 2: Relative growth rate (RGR), root:shoot ratio (R:S), specific leaf area (SLA), and foliar N content of *A. filiculoides* (a, b, c, and d respectively), *S. molesta* (e, f, g, and h respectively), and *V. spiralis* (i, j, k, and I respectively) grown under ambient and elevated

236 [CO<sub>2</sub>] over 49 days. Error bars represent  $\pm$  1 SE and the letters above the error bars indicate 237 where there were significant statistical differences.

238

239 Discussion

In this study, we investigated the growth, reproduction, biomass allocation and 240 241 functional trait responses of two free-floating ferns, Azolla filiculoides (Azollaceae) and 242 Salvinia molesta (Salviniaceae), and a submerged angiosperm, Vallisneria spiralis 243 (Hydrocharitaceae) to elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>]. We first hypothesised that A. *filiculoides* and S. 244 molesta would have greater growth and reproduction under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] because they are 245 fast-growing species that photosynthesise via the C<sub>3</sub> pathway (Ray *et al.*, 1979), which are typical characteristics of CO<sub>2</sub> responsive species. We found that the native A. filiculoides 246 247 responded as predicted, with plants grown under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] having faster RGR and 248 greater mat size than those grown under ambient [CO<sub>2</sub>]. Previous studies have reported similar findings for A. *filiculoides* under high [CO<sub>2</sub>] (Cheng et al., 2010; van Kempen et al., 249 250 2016). It has often been shown that CO<sub>2</sub> responsiveness in plants depends on nutrient 251 availability, suggesting that N-fixing species should respond strongly to elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] 252 (Poorter, 1993). The Azolla-Anabaena complex is reported to have the highest rates of 253 nitrogen fixation among N-fixing organisms (Wagner, 1997) and it has been shown that even 254 in nitrogen-free growth media A. *filiculoides* still had a strong growth response to elevated 255 [CO<sub>2</sub>] (Idso *et al.*, 1987). Therefore, it is likely that the strong growth response of A. 256 *filiculoides* under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] in our experiment was a result of it having ample N supply 257 due to the presence of the N-fixing symbiont so it was able to utilise the additional carbon 258 that was available.

259 In contrast to A. *filiculoides*, S. *molesta* did not show differential response in growth 260 or reproduction (bud number) to CO<sub>2</sub> treatment, despite also having the C<sub>3</sub> photosynthetic 261 system. A possible explanation for this lack of responsiveness is that S. molesta in the present 262 study was neither N- nor carbon-limited. With regards to nutrients, S. molesta has been shown to grow well at nitrate concentrations 0.02 - 0.9 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup>, with the highest 263 growth rate being at a mid-range concentration of 0.1 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup> (Gufu *et al.*, 2018). In 264 265 addition, simultaneous elevation of both [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient supply was found to result in 266 marginal growth increases in S. molesta compared to when only one of the resources was 267 enriched (chapter 6 of this thesis). Therefore, S. molesta in the present study might have 268 already been growing at close to its full capacity under ambient [CO<sub>2</sub>] such that an increase in 269 [CO<sub>2</sub>] would have had little effect. Alternatively, the dense hydrophobic hairs that cover the 270 upper leaf surface of S. molesta (Barthlott et al., 2009) might have reflected light and in turn 271 diminished the photosynthetic capacity of the species, as has been shown in the desert shrub, 272 Encelia farinosa (brittlebush) (Ehleringer & Mooney, 1978).

273 As predicted, growth and reproduction of V. spiralis was unaffected by elevated 274 [CO<sub>2</sub>]. This prediction was based on the fact that V. spiralis has a carbon concentrating 275 mechanism so that it is capable of overcoming CO<sub>2</sub> limitation under current ambient [CO<sub>2</sub>]. 276 Furthermore, it has been suggested that most species that switch between the use of free  $CO_2$ 277 and  $HCO_3$  such as V. spiralis show only small growth changes in response to elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] 278 (Hasler et al., 2016). However, previous studies have reported dramatic increases in both 279 growth and reproduction for a number of *Vallisneria* spp. under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] (Titus & 280 Andorfer, 1996; Yan, Yu & Li, 2006; Cao & Ruan, 2015). The disparity between our results 281 and those obtained by these studies may be related to the respective concentrations of both 282 CO<sub>2</sub> and nutrients applied, as well as the pH of the growth medium. For example, while our 283 elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] concentration was approximately 600 ppm, these studies used [CO<sub>2</sub>] of up to

284 22-times the ambient [CO<sub>2</sub>]. In addition, while our nitrogen and phosphorus concentrations were 0.8 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup> and 0.1 mg P-PO<sub>4</sub> L<sup>-1</sup> respectively, Titus and Andorfer (1996) used 285 up to 10.4 mg N L<sup>-1</sup> and 1.3 mg P L<sup>-1</sup>. In general, submerged freshwater plant species have 286 287 been shown to vary widely in their growth and reproduction responses to CO<sub>2</sub> enrichment 288 (Madsen & Sand-Jensen, 1994; Pagano & Titus, 2004; Hussner et al., 2014). It is also 289 possible that the diffusive resistance of  $CO_2$  in water as well as outgassing created by 290 turbulence (Maberly & Madsen, 2002) meant that a 200 ppm increase in [CO<sub>2</sub>] as applied in 291 our experiment was not large enough to appreciably alter the dissolved carbon content of the 292 water column and consequently stimulate growth and reproduction of species that possess 293 carbon concentrating mechanisms. Alternatively, the relatively low light levels during the 294 growth period might have limited V. spiralis growth response to elevated CO<sub>2</sub>.

295 We then hypothesised that the study species would allocate more biomass to roots 296 under elevated  $[CO_2]$ . This is based on the fact that plants tend to differentially allocate 297 biomass to their structures in order to optimise resource acquisition and minimise imbalance 298 (Bloom, Chapin III & Mooney, 1985). Therefore, under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>], carbon becomes less 299 limiting so most plants tend to allocate more biomass to their roots to increase their nutrient 300 acquisition potential in order to maximise their carbon fixation capacity (Arp, 1991). 301 However at the 600 ppm treatment we applied there was no difference in root:shoot ratio 302 compared to the ambient 400 ppm treatment for any of the species studied. This result was 303 predicted for A. filiculoides because its symbiotic association with N-fixing A. azollae was 304 expected to provide the plants with sufficient nitrogen so that further allocation to nutrient 305 acquisition was not required. For S. molesta and V. spiralis, biomass production was not 306 affected by CO<sub>2</sub> enrichment, suggesting that they were either not carbon limited under 307 ambient  $[CO_2]$  or that the CO<sub>2</sub> increase was insufficient to have an effect. As both species 308 utilise leaves as well as roots for nutrient uptake (Julien & Bourne, 1986; Madsen &

CO<sub>2</sub> effect on species traits

Cedergreen, 2002), there is less need for a shift to allocate resources for nutrient acquisition
towards the roots, especially when nutrient solutions are directly added to the water column.
Interestingly, the ramets of *V. spiralis* plants grown under elevated CO<sub>2</sub> allocated
comparatively more biomass to their shoots than roots, suggesting that the ramets, being
shorter in stature, may have been more light limited than carbon limited (Poorter & Nagel,
2000).

315 Further, we examined how the key functional traits (SLA, foliar N content) of the 316 study species are altered by elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>]. We first predicted that the SLA of both A. 317 filiculoides and S. molesta will be reduced under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] due to an increase in non-318 structural carbohydrates and leaf thickness which is a common response in C<sub>3</sub> terrestrial 319 species (Poorter & Navas, 2003; Ainsworth & Long, 2005). We found this was the case for 320 A. filiculoides and not for S. molesta. It is important to note that the strategy of S. molesta is 321 to invest in colonising space rapidly and it may not store non-structural compounds in its 322 tissues until third growth phase is reached when leaves become crowded and start expanding in size (Mitchell & Tur, 1975). Our S. molesta plants were harvested before reaching the third 323 324 growth phase which may explain the lack of the CO<sub>2</sub> effect on their SLA. However, the SLA 325 of S. molesta was significantly higher than the SLA of the two native species, irrespective of 326 CO<sub>2</sub> treatment, which is consistent with its rapid growth capacity and success as an invasive 327 species (Baruch & Goldstein, 1999; Leishman et al., 2007; Leishman, Thomson & Cooke, 328 2010). As predicted, SLA of V. spiralis was unaffected by [CO<sub>2</sub>].

Finally, we predicted that foliar N content of the C<sub>3</sub> species (*A. filiculoides* and *S. molesta*) would be reduced under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] due to increased accumulation of C resulting from increased growth diluting the amount of N in the plant tissue (Titus & Andorfer, 1996). This trend has been reported in previous studies for *A. filiculoides* and

333 Vallisneria spp. (Yan, Yu & Li, 2006; Cheng et al., 2010; Hussner et al., 2016). In contrast

CO<sub>2</sub> effect on species traits

to our predictions, we found that foliar N content did not differ between  $CO_2$  treatments for any of our study species. Despite being contrary to our hypothesis, this result is unsurprising for *S. molesta* and *V. spiralis* because their growth did not differ between  $CO_2$  treatments, and therefore there was no differential growth dilution of foliar N. However, it is surprising that despite increased growth response under elevated  $[CO_2]$ , *A. filiculoides* did not exhibit growth dilution of foliar N.

340 In summary, the observed differences in responses of our study species suggest that 341 freshwater plant responses to elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] are likely to be species-specific, but that N-342 fixing species may show the strongest responses. In addition, a modest increase in atmospheric [CO<sub>2</sub>] under moderately eutrophic and low light conditions is likely to have little 343 344 effect on growth of the submerged species. This is also partly due to the diffusive resistance 345 of atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> in water and the large boundary layer (Maberly & Madsen, 2002; Hasler 346 et al., 2016). One question that has largely remained unexplored is the potential weak 347 acidification of freshwater systems induced by elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] and how this might affect 348 organisms and ecosystem processes (Phillips et al., 2015; Hasler et al., 2016; Hasler et al., 349 2018) by altering dissolved inorganic carbon and nutrient dynamics in fresh waters as well as 350 photosynthetic rates in freshwater plants (Santamaría, 2002). For example, a dramatic 351 increase in *Vallisneria* spp. growth rates in response to elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] has been observed 352 when the pH is low relative to when it is high (Titus, Feldman & Grise, 1990; Titus & 353 Andorfer, 1996; Hussner et al., 2016). There are many factors in the freshwater system that 354 could mediate plant responses to elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>], including pH changes, eutrophication, 355 turbidity, altered thermal and hydrological regimes, and biotic interactions (Dudgeon et al., 356 2006). Therefore, it is important to investigate how the interactions between  $CO_2$  and other 357 global and local environmental change factors will influence performance and biotic

- interactions among freshwater plant species, in order to better understand global changeimpacts on freshwater systems.
- 360

### 361 Acknowledgements

- 362 We thank Dr. Muhammad Masood for invaluable assistance with the glasshouse operations
- and Paul Marynissen for plant propagules. We are indebted to the editor in chief and two

anonymous reviewers for their helpful comments.

365

### 366 **References**

367 Ainsworth E.A. & Long S.P. (2005) What have we learned from 15 years of free-air CO<sub>2</sub>

368 enrichment (FACE)? A meta-analytic review of the responses of photosynthesis,

- 369 canopy properties and plant production to rising CO<sub>2</sub>. *New Phytologist*, **165**, 351-372.
- 370 Arp W. (1991) Effects of source-sink relations on photosynthetic acclimation to elevated
- 371 CO<sub>2</sub>. *Plant, Cell & Environment,* **14**, 869-875.
- Barthlott W., Wiersch S., Čolić Z. & Koch K. (2009) Classification of trichome types within
  species of the water fern *Salvinia*, and ontogeny of the egg-beater trichomes. *Botany*,
  87, 830-836.
- Baruch Z. & Goldstein G. (1999) Leaf construction cost, nutrient concentration, and net CO<sub>2</sub>
  assimilation of native and invasive species in Hawaii. *Oecologia*, **121**, 183-192.
- Betts R.A., Jones C.D., Knight J.R., Keeling R.F. & Kennedy J.J. (2016) El Niño and a
  record CO<sub>2</sub> rise. *Nature Climate Change*, 6, 806.
- Bloom A.J., Chapin Iii F.S. & Mooney H.A. (1985) Resource limitation in plants An
  economic analogy. *Annual Review of Ecology and Systematics*, 16, 363-392.

- Bornette G. & Puijalon S. (2011) Response of aquatic plants to abiotic factors: A review.
   *Aquatic Sciences*, **73**, 1-14.
- Bowes G. (1993) Facing the inevitable: Plants and increasing atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub>. *Annual Review of Plant Biology*, 44, 309-332.
- Cao J. & Ruan H. (2015) Responses of the submerged macrophyte *Vallisneria natans* to
  elevated CO<sub>2</sub> and temperature. *Aquatic Biology*, 23, 119-127.
- Carpenter S.R., Stanley E.H. & Vander Zanden M.J. (2011) State of the world's freshwater
   ecosystems: Physical, chemical, and biological changes. *Annual Review of*
- 389 *Environment and Resources*, **36**, 75-99.
- 390 Cheng W., Sakai H., Matsushima M., Yagi K. & Hasegawa T. (2010) Response of the
- floating aquatic fern *Azolla filiculoides* to elevated CO<sub>2</sub>, temperature, and phosphorus
  levels. *Hydrobiologia*, **656**, 5-14.
- 393 Dudgeon D., Arthington A.H., Gessner M.O., Kawabata Z.-I., Knowler D.J., Lévêque C.,
- 394 Naiman R.J., Prieur-Richard A.-H., Soto D. & Stiassny M.L. (2006) Freshwater
- 395 biodiversity: Importance, threats, status and conservation challenges. *Biological*
- 396 *Reviews*, **81**, 163-182.
- 397 Dülger E., Heidbüchel P., Schumann T., Mettler-Altmann T. & Hussner A. (2017) Interactive
  398 effects of nitrate concentrations and carbon dioxide on the stoichiometry, biomass
  399 allocation and growth rate of submerged aquatic plants. *Freshwater Biology*, 62,
  400 1094-1104.
- 401 Ehleringer J.R. & Mooney H.A. (1978) Leaf hairs: Effects on physiological activity and
  402 adaptive value to a desert shrub. *Oecologia*, **37**, 183-200.
- 403 Espinar J.L., Díaz-Delgado R., Bravo-Utrera M.A. & Vilà M. (2015) Linking Azolla
- 404 *filiculoides* invasion to increased winter temperatures in the Doñana marshland (SW
- 405 Spain). Aquatic Invasions, **10**, 17-24.

- Gross E.M., Johnson R.L. & Hairston Jr N.G. (2001) Experimental evidence for changes in
  submersed macrophyte species composition caused by the herbivore *Acentria ephemerella* (Lepidoptera). *Oecologia*, **127**, 105-114.
- 409 Gufu G.D., Manea A., Vorreiter L. & Leishman M.R. (2018) Do invasive exotic and native
- 410 freshwater plant species respond similarly to low additional nitrate doses? *Aquatic*
- 411 *Botany*, **151**, 1-8.
- Hasler C.T., Butman D., Jeffrey J.D. & Suski C.D. (2016) Freshwater biota and rising pCO<sub>2</sub>? *Ecology Letters*, **19**, 98-108.
- 414 Hasler C.T., Jeffrey J.D., Schneider E.V.C., Hannan K.D., Tix J.A. & Suski C.D. (2018)
- Biological consequences of weak acidification caused by elevated carbon dioxide in
  freshwater ecosystems. *Hydrobiologia*, **806**, 1-12.
- Helder R. & Van Harmelen M. (1982) Carbon assimilation pattern in the submerged leaves of
  the aquatic angiosperm: *Vallisneria spiralis* L. *Plant Biology*, **31**, 281-295.
- 419 Hussner A., Hofstra D., Jahns P. & Clayton J. (2014) Response capacity to CO<sub>2</sub> depletion
- 420 rather than temperature and light effects explain the growth success of three alien
- 421 Hydrocharitaceae compared with native *Myriophyllum triphyllum* in New Zealand.
- 422 *Aquatic Botany*, **120**, 205-211.
- 423 Hussner A., Mettler-Altmann T., Weber A.P. & Sand-Jensen K. (2016) Acclimation of

424 photosynthesis to supersaturated CO<sub>2</sub> in aquatic plant bicarbonate users. *Freshwater*425 *Biology*, **61**, 1720-1732.

- 426 Idso S., Kimball B., Anderson M. & Mauney J. (1987) Effects of atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub>
- 427 enrichment on plant growth: The interactive role of air temperature. *Agriculture*,
- 428 *Ecosystems & Environment*, **20**, 1-10.

- Julien M.H. & Bourne A.S. (1986) Compensatory branching and changes in nitrogen content
  in the aquatic weed *Salvinia molesta* in response to disbudding. *Oecologia*, **70**, 250257.
- Keeley, J. E., 1998. CAM photosynthesis in submerged aquatic plants. *The Botanical Review*,
  64,121-175.
- Kimball B.A. (1983) Carbon dioxide and agricultural yield: An assemblage and analysis of
  435 430 prior observations 1. *Agronomy Journal*, **75**, 779-788.
- 436 Leakey A.D., Ainsworth E.A., Bernacchi C.J., Rogers A., Long S.P. & Ort D.R. (2009)
- 437 Elevated CO<sub>2</sub> effects on plant carbon, nitrogen, and water relations: Six important
  438 lessons from FACE. *Journal of Experimental Botany*, **60**, 2859-2876.
- 439 Leishman M.R., Haslehurst T., Ares A. & Baruch Z. (2007) Leaf trait relationships of native
  440 and invasive plants: Community-and global-scale comparisons. *New Phytologist*, **176**,
- 441 635-643.
- Leishman M.R., Thomson V.P. & Cooke J. (2010) Native and exotic invasive plants have
  fundamentally similar carbon capture strategies. *Journal of Ecology*, 98, 28-42.
- Low-Décarie E., Fussmann G.F. & Bell G. (2014) Aquatic primary production in a high-CO<sub>2</sub>
  world. *Trends in Ecology & Evolution*, **29**, 223-232.
- 446 Maberly S.C. & Madsen T.V. (2002) Freshwater angiosperm carbon concentrating
  447 mechanisms: processes and patterns. *Functional Plant Biology*, 29, 393-405.
- 448 Madsen T. & Sand-Jensen K. (1994) The interactive effects of light and inorganic carbon on
  449 aquatic plant growth. *Plant, Cell & Environment*, **17**, 955-962.
- 450 Madsen T.V. & Cedergreen N. (2002) Sources of nutrients to rooted submerged macrophytes
  451 growing in a nutrient-rich stream. *Freshwater Biology*, 47, 283-291.
- 452 Mitchell D. & Tur N. (1975) The rate of growth of *Salvinia molesta* (*S. auriculata* Auct.) in
- 453 laboratory and natural conditions. *Journal of Applied Ecology*, 213-225.

- 454 Pagano A.M. & Titus J.E. (2004) Submersed macrophyte growth at low pH: Contrasting
- responses of three species to dissolved inorganic carbon enrichment and sediment
  type. *Aquatic Botany*, **79**, 65-74.
- 457 Parmesan C. & Yohe G. (2003) A globally coherent fingerprint of climate change impacts
  458 across natural systems. *Nature*, **421**, 37.
- 459 Phillips J.C., Mckinley G.A., Bennington V., Bootsma H.A., Pilcher D.J., Sterner R.W. &
- 460 Urban N.R. (2015) The potential for CO<sub>2</sub>-induced acidification in freshwater: A Great
  461 Lakes case study. *Oceanography*, 28, 136-145.
- 462 Poorter H. (1993) Interspecific variation in the growth response of plants to an elevated
  463 ambient CO<sub>2</sub> concentration. *Vegetatio*, **104**, 77-97.
- 464 Poorter H. & Nagel O. (2000) The role of biomass allocation in the growth response of plants
  465 to different levels of light, CO<sub>2</sub>, nutrients and water: a quantitative review. *Functional*466 *Plant Biology*, 27, 1191-1191.
- 467 Poorter H. & Navas M.L. (2003) Plant growth and competition at elevated CO<sub>2</sub>: On winners,
  468 losers and functional groups. *New Phytologist*, **157**, 175-198.
- 469 Prentice C., Farquhar G., Fasham M., Goulden M., Heimann M., Jaramillo V., Kheshgi H.,
- 470 Le Quere C., Scholes R. & Wallace D. (2001) The carbon cycle and atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub>.
- 471 In: Climate Change: The Scientific Basis. (Eds J. Houghton & Y. Ding & D. Griggs &
- 472 M. Noguer & P. Van Der Linden & X. Dai & K. Maskell & C. Johnson), pp. 183-237.
  473 Cambridge University Press, Cambridge.
- 474 Ray T.B., Mayne B.C., Toia R.E. & Peters G.A. (1979) Azolla-Anabaena relationship: VIII.
- 475 Photosynthetic characterization of the association and individual partners. *Plant*
- 476 *Physiology*, **64**, 791-795.
- 477 Raymond P.A., Hartmann J., Lauerwald R., Sobek S., Mcdonald C., Hoover M., Butman D.,
- 478 Striegl R., Mayorga E., Humborg C., Kortelainen P., Dürr H., Meybeck M., Ciais P.

- 479 & Guth P. (2013) Global carbon dioxide emissions from inland waters. *Nature*, **503**,
- 480 355.
- 481 Santamaría L. (2002) Why are most aquatic plants widely distributed? Dispersal, clonal
- 482 growth and small-scale heterogeneity in a stressful environment. *Acta Oecologica*, 23,
  483 137-154.
- 484 Smart R.M. & Barko J.W. (1985) Laboratory culture of submersed freshwater macrophytes
  485 on natural sediments. *Aquatic Botany*, 21, 251-263.
- 486 Spencer W. & Bowes G. (1986) Photosynthesis and growth of water hyacinth under CO<sub>2</sub>
  487 enrichment. *Plant Physiology*, **82**, 528-533.
- 488 Titus J. & Andorfer J. (1996) Effects of CO<sub>2</sub> enrichment on mineral accumulation and

489 nitrogen relations in a submersed macrophyte. *Freshwater Biology*, **36**, 661-671.

- 490 Titus J., Feldman R. & Grise D. (1990) Submersed macrophyte growth at low pH. I. CO<sub>2</sub>
  491 enrichment effects with fertile sediement. *Oecologia*, **84**, 307-313.
- 492 Van Kempen M.M., Smolders A.J., Bögemann G.M., Lamers L.P. & Roelofs J.G. (2016)
- 493 Interacting effects of atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> enrichment and solar radiation on growth of
  494 the aquatic fern *Azolla filiculoides*. *Freshwater Biology*, **61**, 596-606.
- Vermaat J.E., Santamaria L. & Roos P.J. (2000) Water flow across and sediment trapping in
  submerged macrophyte beds of contrasting growth form. *Archiv für Hydrobiologie*,
- **148,** 549-562.
- Wagner G.M. (1997) *Azolla*: a review of its biology and utilization. *The Botanical Review*,
  63, 1-26.
- Webb D.R., Rattray M.R. & Brown J.M.A. (1988) A preliminary survey for crassulacean
  acid metabolism (CAM) in submerged aquatic macrophytes in New Zealand. *New*
- 502 Zealand Journal of Marine and Freshwater Research, **22**, 231-235.
- 503

504	Yan X., Yu D. & Li YK. (2006) The effects of elevated CO <sub>2</sub> on clonal growth and nutrient
505	content of submerge plant Vallisneria spinulosa. Chemosphere, 62, 595-601.
506	Yin L., Li W., Madsen T.V., Maberly S.C. & Bowes G. (2017) Photosynthetic inorganic
507	carbon acquisition in 30 freshwater macrophytes. Aquatic Botany, 140, 48-54.
508	

509 Supplementary materials

**Supplementary Table 1:** Summary descriptive statistics of CO<sub>2</sub> effect on the traits values of the study species (RGR = Relative Growth Rate;

511	R:S = Root to shoot ratio; $SLA = Specific Leas$	f Area; DW = Dry weight). Th	he dash symbol (-) indicates that	t a trait value was not measured.
	, I		J ()	

		Azolla filiculoides			Salvinia mol	lesta		Vallisneria		
Trait	[CO2]	Mean	SD	SE	Mean	SD	SE	Mean	SD	SE
RGR (g g <sup>-1</sup> day <sup>-1</sup> )	Ambient	0.096	0.007	0.002	0.089	0.005	0.001	0.018	0.006	0.00
	Elevated	0.110	0.007	0.002	0.089	0.010	0.003	0.019	0.004	0.00
R:S (g/g)	Ambient	0.267	0.058	0.015	0.505	0.077	0.021	0.284	0.051	0.01
	Elevated	0.269	0.030	0.008	0.538	0.089	0.024	0.238	0.051	0.01
SLA (mm <sup>2</sup> mg <sup>-1</sup> )	Ambient	44.768	4.320	1.155	56.867	4.867	1.301	26.213	3.355	0.89
	Elevated	35.555	3.655	0.977	64.441	14.326	3.829	26.566	1.532	0.40
N (% of dry weight)	Ambient	3.313	0.262	0.070	1.972	0.495	0.132	1.916	0.225	0.06
	Elevated	3.196	0.441	0.118	1.878	0.307	0.082	1.868	0.102	0.02
Mat Surface Area (cm <sup>2</sup> )	Ambient	347.079	74.773	19.984	-	-	-	-	-	
	Elevated	496.929	83.069	22.201	-	-	-	-	-	
Leaf size (cm <sup>2</sup> )	Ambient	-	-	-	1.020	0.118	0.032	-	-	
	Elevated	-	-	-	0.993	0.162	0.043	-	-	

## **Supplementary Table 1 continued**.

			Azolla filiculoides Salvinia mol			molesta Vallisneria spiralis						
Trait	[CO2]	Mean SD		SE		Mean	SD	SE	Mean	SD	SE	
Internode Length (mm)	Ambient		-	-	-	15.762	0.956	0.255	-	-	-	
	Elevated		-	-	-	16.476	0.903	0.241	-	-	-	
Bud Number	Ambient		-	-	-	70.786	25.223	6.741	-	-	-	
	Elevated		-	-	-	65.929	21.840	5.837	-	-	-	
Leaf Number	Ambient		-	-	-	229.857	56.500	15.100	37.000	7.348	1.964	
	Elevated		-	-	-	206.714	76.039	20.322	40.000	6.679	1.785	
Ramet Number	Ambient		-	-	-	-	-	-	5.429	1.505	0.402	
	Elevated		-	-	-	-	-	-	5.643	1.550	0.414	
Ramet DW (g)	Ambient		-	-	-	-	-	-	0.259	0.094	0.025	
	Elevated		-	-	-	-	-	-	0.311	0.117	0.031	
Flower Number	Ambient		-	-	-	-	-	-	5.286	1.684	0.450	
	Elevated		-	-	-	-	-	-	6.857	2.878	0.769	
Max. Leaf Length (cm)	Ambient		-	-	-	-	-	-	51.100	7.209	1.927	
	Elevated		-	-	-	-	-	-	50.779	5.772	1.543	

# **CHAPTER FIVE**

Responses of invasive and naturalised ornamental freshwater plant species to elevated carbon dioxide concentration and nutrient enrichment.

This chapter has been prepared for publication in Hydrobiologia.

My contribution to the research and paper: Concept – 90%; Data collection – 100%; Analysis – 100%; Writing – 90%

#### 1 Abstract

2 Global freshwater systems are currently experiencing significant threats as a result of 3 human activities. One such threat is the invasion of exotic species which is thought to be 4 facilitated in some parts by ongoing global environmental changes such as rising atmospheric 5 CO<sub>2</sub> concentration ([CO<sub>2</sub>]) and eutrophication. Although an increasing number of studies 6 have documented the impacts of global change environmental factors on native and invasive 7 freshwater plant species, relatively little is known about how factors such as elevated CO<sub>2</sub> 8 and nutrient enrichment might interact to impact invasive exotic species relative to their 9 naturalised or native counterparts in these systems. In this study we investigated the growth 10 and biomass allocation responses of two invasive (Mentha pulegium and Zanthedeschia 11 *aethiopica*) and three naturalised ornamental freshwater plant species (*Ludwigia palustris*, 12 Mentha aquatica and Rorippa nasturtium-aquaticum) to varied levels of CO<sub>2</sub> (ambient and elevated), and nutrient (low and high) concentrations. We found that relative growth rate 13 14 (RGR) of the naturalised L. palustris was enhanced under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] while RGR of the 15 naturalised R. nasturtium-aquaticum and invasive M. pulegium was greater in the high 16 nutrient treatment. The combination of elevated  $CO_2$  and higher nutrient availability 17 increased RGR of only the invasive Z. aethiopica. Overall, we found no evidence for 18 consistent growth and biomass allocation differences between the invasive and naturalised 19 species. However, it is necessary that future research assesses potential shifts in the 20 competitive interactions between native and exotic (naturalised and invasive) freshwater 21 species in response to global environmental changes in order to determine community-level 22 consequences of these changes.

23

24 Key words: emergent; glasshouse; growth; RGR; root; shoot

#### 25 Introduction

26 Globally, freshwater ecosystems are under threat from a variety of factors including 27 loss of habitat, eutrophication, climate change and invasive species (Dudgeon et al. 2006). 28 Among these threats, the widespread introduction of exotic species, usually through 29 ornamental and horticultural plant trade, is thought to be one of the most important (Ricciardi & Kipp, 2008; Hulme, 2009; Keller et al., 2011). This is because the majority of freshwater 30 31 systems are highly modified by human activity (Geist, 2011), making them particularly 32 vulnerable to establishment of exotic species which tend to be favoured by such disturbances 33 (Alpert et al., 2000). However, only a small proportion of the introduced plant species 34  $(\sim 10\%)$  tend to establish and become naturalised, remaining localised within a few areas 35 without exerting negative impacts on the native community (Williamson & Fitter, 1996). A 36 subset of these naturalised species (~10%) become invasive by spreading widely and 37 simultaneously exerting negative influence on the ecosystem (Richardson et al., 2000). 38 Consequently, invasive exotic species have been implicated as the major cause of severe 39 native biodiversity declines in freshwater systems (Riis et al., 2012; Gallardo et al., 2016). An important applied question is whether ongoing global environmental change will favour 40 41 more of the naturalised species to become invasive while simultaneously amplifying the 42 effects of the already invasive species (Groves, 2006; Scott et al., 2008; Duursma et al., 43 2013; Sorte et al., 2013).

One of the best documented global change environmental factors that could favour the invasion of exotic species into freshwater systems is the rise in atmospheric carbon dioxide concentration ([CO<sub>2</sub>]). A number of experimental studies of submerged freshwater plant species have shown that these species respond to elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] by having increased growth rates (Hussner *et al.*, 2016; Dülger *et al.*, 2017), increased root to shoot ratio (Yan, Yu & Li,

2006; Hussner *et al.*, 2014; Cao & Ruan, 2015; Dülger *et al.*, 2017) and reduced foliar N
content (Yan, Yu & Li, 2006; Hussner *et al.*, 2016). However, the few studies that have
compared the responses of freshwater plant species with different invasion status to elevated
[CO<sub>2</sub>] have revealed no consistent patterns (Hussner *et al.*, 2014; Hussner & Jahns, 2015).

53 Another environmental factor that has been shown to promote exotic species 54 invasions in freshwater ecosystems is the addition of nutrients from anthropogenic sources 55 into water bodies (Carpenter, Stanley & Vander Zanden, 2011; Wersal & Madsen, 2011). 56 This is based on the evidence that invasive freshwater plant species tend to have a stronger 57 growth response to increased nutrient availability than their native counterparts (Van, Wheeler & Center, 1999; Hastwell, Daniel & Vivian-Smith, 2008; Fan et al., 2013). 58 59 Furthermore, nutrient enrichment may interact with other global change environmental 60 factors to modify plant growth responses. For example, it often acts synergistically with elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] to promote plant growth (Poorter & Navas, 2003; Reich, Hungate & Luo, 61 62 2006). This is evident in the responsiveness of *Eichhornia crassipes* (an invasive exotic freshwater species) growth to CO<sub>2</sub> enrichment which has been shown to be more pronounced 63 64 under eutrophic conditions compared to oligotrophic conditions (Liu et al., 2010). In addition 65 to influencing growth responses, both [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient concentration may interact to affect leaf- and plant-level traits such as specific leaf area (SLA) and root to shoot ratio (R:S). For 66 example, terrestrial plants tend to allocate more biomass to their roots when grown under 67 68 CO<sub>2</sub> enriched and nutrient-poor conditions to optimise acquisition of the most limiting resource (Arp, 1991; Craine, 2006; Nie et al., 2013). Despite a number of studies 69 70 documenting the effects of either elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] (Hussner et al., 2014; Hussner & Jahns, 71 2015) or nutrient enrichment (Hastwell, Daniel & Vivian-Smith, 2008; Silveira & Thomaz, 72 2015) on native and invasive exotic freshwater plant species, little is known about how in

combination, these factors might affect invasive exotic species relative to their naturalisedcounterparts.

75 In this study we investigated the responses of five exotic ornamental freshwater plant 76 species to varied CO<sub>2</sub> and nutrient concentrations. All five study species are readily available 77 for purchase from water garden nurseries in Australia. They all have an emergent growth 78 form and fix atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> via the C<sub>3</sub> pathway and are therefore likely to be comparable 79 to terrestrial plants in their response to elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] (Bowes, 1993). Two of the selected 80 exotic species, Mentha pulegium (pennyroyal) and Zantedescia aethiopica (arum lily), are 81 considered invasive in some Australian states and territories while the remaining three, 82 Mentha aquatica (water mint), Ludwigia palustris (marsh ludwigia), and Rorippa nasturtium-83 aquaticum (water cress), are naturalised but not invasive (Randall, 2007). Zantedeschia 84 aethiopica is a rhizomatous species while the rest may be classified as creeping emergent (Rejmánková, 1992). These species have wide native distributions and are therefore likely to 85 86 have wide environmental tolerances which may have contributed to their successful 87 establishment in their introduced ranges. 88 We grew the species in a controlled glasshouse experiment under ambient and 89 elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] and low and high nutrient concentrations and then measured their growth and

allocation traits including relative growth rate (RGR), root to shoot ratio (R:S), and specific
leaf area (SLA). We hypothesised that:

92 (i) all the species, particularly the invasive ones, will have the greatest growth 93 responses under resource enriched conditions (elevated  $[CO_2] \times$  high nutrient 94 concentration).

- 95 (ii) all species will allocate more biomass to their roots when grown under elevated
  96 [CO<sub>2</sub>], and low nutrient concentration compared to ambient [CO<sub>2</sub>] and high
  97 nutrient concentration respectively.
- 98 (iii) all species will have reduced SLA when grown under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] and low
  99 nutrient concentration compared to ambient [CO<sub>2</sub>] and high nutrient concentration
  100 respectively but the invasive species will have comparatively higher SLA values.
  101

102 Methods

103 **Plant collection and preparation** 

104 Similar sized seedlings of each of the species (Figure 1; Table 1) were purchased from 105 a commercial supplier (Watergarden Paradise, Bass Hill, NSW, Australia). Prior to the start 106 of the experiment, a sub-sample of 20 individual seedlings of each species with known sizes 107 (based on shoot length and fresh weight) were randomly selected, oven-dried at 70°C for 48 108 hours and weighed using an analytical electronic balance (Mettler Toledo, Port Melbourne, 109 VIC, Australia). Using this biomass data, we obtained a regression equation for the 110 relationship between the fresh and dry weights of the sub-sample seedlings for each species. 111 These regression equations were later used to calculate the initial dry weight of each 112 experimental seedling from its initial fresh weight. 113 114 115 116 117

118

Species	Family	Native range	Naturalised range	Status in Australia
Ludwigia palustris (L.) Elliott	Onagraceae	Europe, North America,	Australia, Hawaii, New Zealand	Naturalised
		Northern and southern Africa,		
		South America, western Asia		
Mentha aquatica L.	Lamiaceae	Europe, North Africa, western	Argentina, Australia, Bolivia,	Naturalised
		Asia	Brazil, Chile, Iceland, New	
			Zealand	
Mentha pulegium L.	Lamiaceae	Europe, North Africa, western	Australia, Hawaii, New	Invasive
		Asia	Zealand, southern South	
			America, mainland USA	
Rorippa nasturtium-aquaticum	Brassicaceae	Europe, North Africa, western	Australia, New Zealand,	Naturalised
(L.) Hayek		Asia	southern Africa, USA	
Zantedeschia aethiopica (L.)	Araceae	Southern Africa	Australia, Hawaii, New	Invasive
Spreng.			Zealand, south-western	
			mainland USA, UK	

## **Table 1:** Details of the exotic freshwater plant species selected for the experiment

121



122

Figure 1: Photos of the experimental plants after (a) one week, and (b) nine weeks ofgrowth taken in different glasshouses.

### 125 Experimental design

126	The experiment was conducted in climate controlled glasshouses at the Plant
127	Growth Facility of Macquarie University, North Ryde, NSW, Australia. We used a two-
128	way factorial design with two levels each of [CO <sub>2</sub> ] and nutrient concentration as the
129	treatments. The [CO <sub>2</sub> ] was set and continuously maintained at 380–420 ppm (ambient) and
130	580–620 ppm (elevated), by a CO <sub>2</sub> dosing and monitoring system (Canary Company Pty
131	Ltd, Lane Cove, NSW, Australia). Nutrients were supplied using complete slow release
132	water garden fertiliser pellets (10N:15P:10K; Manutec Pty Ltd, Cavan, SA, Australia).
133	The low nutrient treatment received one 10 g fertiliser tablet while the high nutrient
134	treatment received two tablets (20 g). Between 14 <sup>th</sup> - 16 <sup>th</sup> February 2018, we selected
135	similar sized pre-weighed seedlings of each species and transplanted one seedling into a

136 10-L transparent plastic tub  $(34 \times 25 \times 14 \text{ cm})$  containing 5 L of washed river sand. Each 137 treatment combination was replicated eight times resulting in a total of 160 tubs, which 138 were evenly split across four glasshouses (two ambient and two elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>]). The 139 substrate (i.e. river sand) was saturated with tap water on a daily basis and the tubs 140 randomly reassigned new positions within the same glasshouse every three to four days to 141 reduce any within-glasshouse effects.

142 The temperature of the glasshouses was maintained at 27°C/22°C day/night which 143 is consistent with the mean summer temperatures experienced by the major freshwater 144 systems in Sydney region, NSW, Australia (Sydney Water, unpublished data). In addition 145 to temperature, the humidity (65-75% at midday) and photosynthetically active radiation 146  $(358 \pm 163 \text{ }\mu\text{mol }\text{m}^{-2} \text{ s}^{-1}, \text{ mean} \pm \text{SD} \text{ at } 2 \text{ }\text{pm})$  of the glasshouses were continuously 147 monitored using a Multi-grow Controller System (Autogrow Systems, Auckland, New 148 Zealand). After six weeks of growth, each plant received the same amount of fertiliser as 149 at the beginning of the experiment.

150 Measurements and harvesting

151 After a three-month growth period, three fully expanded leaves from each plant 152 were harvested and their area was measured using a LI-3100C Area Meter (Li-Cor, 153 Lincoln, NE, United States). The leaves were then oven-dried at 70°C for 48 hours before 154 being weighed. The specific leaf area (SLA) of each plant was then calculated as the area 155 divided by dry mass of the selected leaves. The remaining material of each plant was then 156 harvested and separated into its shoot and root biomass before being oven-dried at 70°C 157 for 48 hours and weighed as described above. We then calculated the RGR and R:S (root 158 dry weight/shoot dry weight) of each plant. The RGR of each plant was calculated as 159 follows:

160  $RGR = (lnW_2 - lnW_1)/T$ , where  $W_2 = final dry weight$ ,  $W_1 = initial dry weight$ , and 161 T = duration of experiment (days).

### 162 Statistical analysis

163	We initially analysed the growth and allocation data using a linear mixed effects
164	model with [CO <sub>2</sub> ], nutrient concentration and invasive status (invasive, naturalised) as
165	fixed factors, and species nested within invasive status as the random factor. We found
166	that there was a significant interaction between [CO <sub>2</sub> ] and species for RGR, R:S and SLA
167	(all $P < 0.05$ ). We therefore opted to analyse the data at a species-level using two-way
168	ANOVAs with each value treated as the dependent variable, and [CO <sub>2</sub> ] and nutrient
169	concentration as the predictor variables. Where necessary, data were log <sub>10</sub> - transformed to
170	meet the assumptions of ANOVA. Tukey HSD post-hoc analyses were used to determine
171	the differences between treatment combinations when an interaction existed. We then used
172	a one-way ANOVA with species as the independent variable to make between-subjects
173	comparisons of the mean RGR and SLA values of the invasive species with each of the
174	naturalised species under the different levels of each treatment.
175	All analyses were performed using SPSS statistical software, version 25 (IBM,
176	Chicago, IL, USA), with significance level set at $P < 0.05$ .
177	
178	Results
179	Relative growth rate

A significant interaction between [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient concentration affected only
the RGR of *Z. aethiopica* (Figure 2; Table 2) where the plants grown under ambient [CO<sub>2</sub>]
in the low nutrient treatment had 25-31% lower RGR compared to the plants grown under

183	the other $CO_2 \times$ nutrient treatment combinations. The RGR of Z. <i>aethiopica</i> did not differ
184	between any of the other $CO_2 \times$ nutrient treatment combinations.

185	Significant effect of [CO <sub>2</sub> ] on RGR was observed only in <i>L. palustris</i> where plants
186	grown under elevated [CO2] had 15% greater RGR compared to the plants grown under
187	ambient [CO <sub>2</sub> ] (Figure 2; Table 2). Similarly, the effect of nutrient concentration on RGR
188	was only evident in <i>M. pulegium</i> and <i>R. nasturtium-aquaticum</i> (Figure 2; Table 2) with the
189	plants grown under high nutrient concentration having 10% and 7% greater RGR
190	respectively compared to their counterparts grown in low nutrient concentration.
191	The mean RGR of the invasive <i>M. pulegium</i> was comparable to that of each of the
192	naturalised species irrespective of treatment except for <i>M. aquatica</i> which had a higher
193	RGR under ambient [CO <sub>2</sub> ] ( $P = 0.024$ ). In contrast, the invasive Z. aethiopica had
194	significantly lower mean RGR compared to each of the naturalised species irrespective of
195	treatment (all $P < 0.05$ ).

- 197 **Table 2:** Summary ANOVA of the effect of [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient concentration on RGR, R:S, and SLA of the study species. Significant effects are
- 198 shown in bold.

				RGR		R:S		SLA	
Species	Status	Source	df	F	Р	F	Р	F	Р
L. palustris	Naturalised	[CO <sub>2</sub> ]	1, 27	4.468	0.044	8.448	0.007	16.982	<0.001
		Nutrient	1, 27	0.006	0.937	7.388	0.011	0.915	0.347
		[CO <sub>2</sub> ]×Nutrient	1, 27	2.013	0.167	2.964	0.097	0.001	0.970
M. aquatica	Naturalised	[CO <sub>2</sub> ]	1, 27	0.076	0.785	0.431	0.517	2.598	0.119
		Nutrient	1, 27	0.181	0.674	0.321	0.576	2.678	0.113
		[CO <sub>2</sub> ]×Nutrient	1, 27	0.050	0.825	0.637	0.432	0.003	0.957
R. nasturtium-	Naturalised	[CO <sub>2</sub> ]	1, 27	3.571	0.070	12.394	0.002	10.547	0.003
aquaticum		Nutrient	1, 27	6.295	0.018	0.375	0.545	1.159	0.291
		[CO <sub>2</sub> ]×Nutrient	1, 27	1.093	0.305	0.971	0.333	0.534	0.471
M. pulegium	Invasive	[CO <sub>2</sub> ]	1, 22	0.580	0.454	0.169	0.685	0.002	0.962
		Nutrient	1, 22	1.250	0.004	5.084	0.034	2.215	0.150
		[CO <sub>2</sub> ]×Nutrient	1, 22	0.460	0.505	0.254	0.620	7.086	0.014

Z. aethiopica	Invasive	[CO <sub>2</sub> ]	1, 27	6.554	0.016	0.976	0.332	4.917	0.035
		Nutrient	1, 27	3.008	0.094	9.525	0.005	0.001	0.980
		[CO <sub>2</sub> ]×Nutrient	1, 27	7.617	0.010	0.616	0.439	0.316	0.439



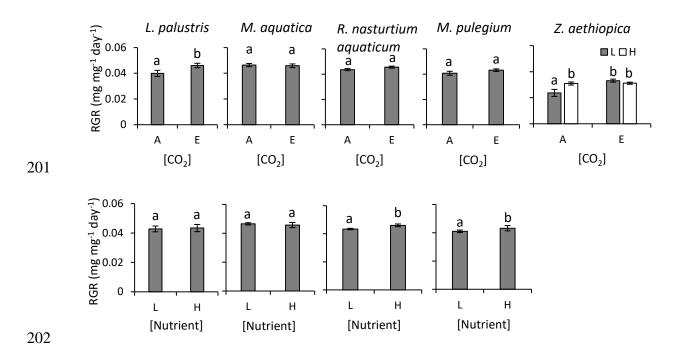


Figure 2: Effect of [CO<sub>2</sub>] (top row; A = Ambient; E = Elevated) and nutrient

204 concentration (bottom row; L = Low; H = High) on RGR of each species. There was a

205 significant  $CO_2 \times$  nutrient effect on the RGR of Z. *aethiopica* as shown in the figure (top

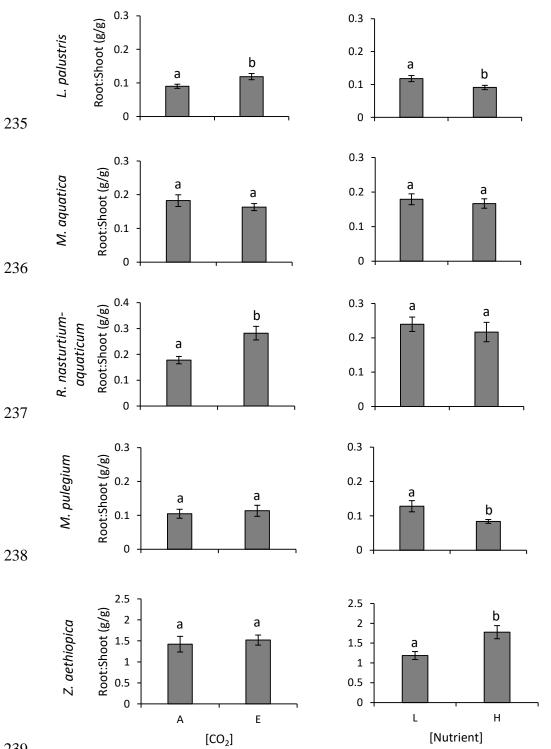
206 row). Error bars represent  $\pm 1$  SE and letters above them indicate where there were

207 significant within-species differences.

### 208 Root to shoot ratio

There were no significant interactions between [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient concentration for R:S for any of the species. [CO<sub>2</sub>] had a significant effect on R:S of only *L. palustris* and *R. nasturtium-aquaticum* with the plants grown under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] having 32% and 54% higher R:S respectively compared to their counterparts grown under ambient [CO<sub>2</sub>] (Figure 3; Table 2). Similarly, nutrient concentration significantly affected the R:S of only *L. palustris*, *M. pulegium* and *Z. aethiopica* (Figure 3; Table 2). *Ludwigia palustris* and *M. pulegium* plants grown under low nutrient concentration allocated 30% and 53% more

216	biomass respectively to their roots compared to their counterparts grown in high nutrient
217	concentration. In contrast, Z. aethiopica plants grown under high nutrient concentration
218	allocated 49% more biomass to their roots compared to their counterparts grown in low
219	nutrient concentration.
220	
221	
222	
223	
224	
225	
226	
227	
228	
229	
230	
231	
232	
233	
234	



239

Figure 3: Effect of  $[CO_2]$  (left column; A = Ambient; E = Elevated) and nutrient concentration (right column; L = Low; H = High) on R:S of each species. Error bars represent  $\pm$  1 SE and letters above them indicate where there were significant withinspecies differences.

# 244 Specific leaf area (SLA)

245	There was a significant interaction between [CO <sub>2</sub> ] and nutrient concentration for
246	SLA of <i>M. pulegium</i> (Figure 4; Table 2) where the plants grown under ambient [CO <sub>2</sub> ] in
247	the high nutrient treatment had 20% higher SLA compared to the plants grown under the
248	other $CO_2 \times$ nutrient treatment combinations. The SLA of <i>M. pulegium</i> did not differ
249	between any of the other $CO_2 \times$ nutrient treatment combinations.
250	There were no significant interactions between [CO <sub>2</sub> ] and nutrient concentration
251	for SLA of any of the other species. In contrast, there was a significant [CO <sub>2</sub> ] effect on the
252	SLA of L. palustris, R. nasturtium-aquaticum, and Z. aethiopica (Figure 4; Table 2) with
253	the plants grown under elevated $[CO_2]$ having 35%, 24% and 12% lower SLAs
254	respectively than the plants grown under ambient [CO <sub>2</sub> ]. However, there was no CO <sub>2</sub>
255	effect on the SLA of <i>M. aquatica</i> while nutrient concentration did not affect the SLA of
256	any of the species (Figure 4; Table 2).
257	Irrespective of treatment, the mean SLA of the invasive <i>M. pulegium</i> was
258	significantly higher than that of the naturalised species (all $P < 0.001$ ) except for R.
259	nasturtium-aquaticum while the mean SLA of the invasive Z. aethiopica was significantly
260	lower than that of the naturalised species (all $P < 0.001$ ).
261	
262	
263	

264

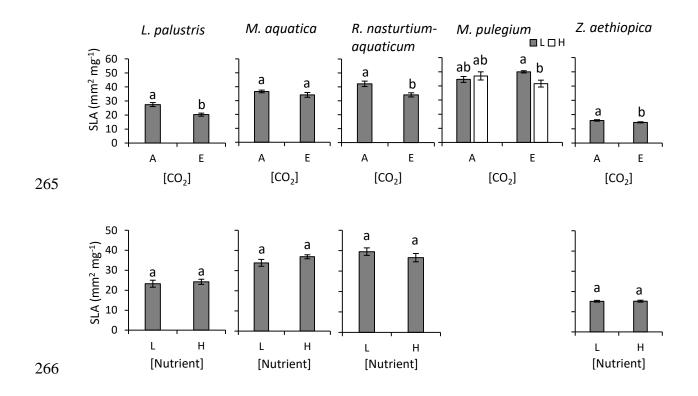


Figure 4: Effect of [CO<sub>2</sub>] (top row; A = Ambient; E = Elevated) and nutrient
concentration (bottom row; L = Low; H = High) on SLA of each species. There was a CO<sub>2</sub>

269 × nutrient effect on SLA of *M. pulegium* as shown in the figure (top row). Error bars

270 represent  $\pm$  1 SE and letters above them indicate where there were significant within-

271 species differences.

272

### 273 Discussion

In this study we grew two invasive exotic and three naturalised emergent

275 freshwater plant species under two levels of [CO<sub>2</sub>] and two levels of nutrient

concentration. We first hypothesised that [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient concentration would have an

277 interactive effect on the relative growth rates of the species, with highest RGR expected

under elevated  $[CO_2]$  and nutrient enrichment. The  $CO2 \times$  nutrient interaction had an

279 effect only for the invasive species Z. *aethiopica*, although simultaneous enrichment of

280	both CO <sub>2</sub> and nutrients did not result in further growth enhancement relative to when only
281	one of the factors was enriched. Similar findings where simultaneous elevation of [CO <sub>2</sub> ]
282	and temperature resulted in marginal growth increases compared to when only one
283	condition was elevated has been observed in terrestrial grass species Austrodanthonia
284	eriantha and Vulpia myuros (Hely & Roxburgh, 2005). Three of the other four species (M.
285	aquatica being the exception) had enhanced growth in response to [CO <sub>2</sub> ] or nutrient
286	enrichment individually. This is consistent with the response of most $C_3$ species to $CO_2$
287	and nutrient enrichment in terrestrial systems (Poorter & Navas, 2003; Reich et al., 2006).
288	The growth of the naturalised species L. palustris was enhanced under elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ].
289	This positive response has also been found for its congener L. repens [CO <sub>2</sub> ] (Lytle, 2003).
290	However, L. palustris growth was unaffected by nutrient treatment, consistent with
291	findings of a previous study of this species, where nutrient enrichment was up to 0.8 mg
292	N-NO3 L <sup>-1</sup> (Hastwell, Daniel & Vivian-Smith, 2008). In contrast, the growth of the
293	invasive M. pulegium and naturalised R. nasturtium-aquaticum was enhanced only by
294	nutrient enrichment. Although we did not find comparable studies for M. pulegium,
295	previous studies have shown that the RGR of R. nasturtium-aquaticum (syn. R. officinale)
296	increased with increasing nutrient concentration (Fernandez-Going, Even & Simpson,
297	2013). The naturalised <i>M. aquatica</i> on the other hand, was not responsive to either $CO_2$ or
298	nutrient enrichment. While unexpected, our results are consistent with an earlier study by
299	Pedersen and Sand-Jensen (1997) who found that the growth of <i>M. aquatica</i> was
300	unresponsive to varied levels of sediment fertility.
301	We further predicted that the invasive exotics <i>M</i> . <i>pulegium</i> and <i>Z</i> . <i>aethiopica</i>

We further predicted that the invasive exotics *M. pulegium* and *Z. aethiopica* would have stronger growth responses to both elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient enrichment compared to the three naturalised species. This was because invasive exotic terrestrial species tend to be more responsive to resource enrichment than their naturalised

305 counterparts (Leishman & Thomson, 2005; Schlaepfer et al., 2010; van Kleunen, Weber 306 & Fischer, 2010). For example, a comparison of 14 pairs of invasive and naturalised 307 herbaceous species showed that the invasive species had faster germination and RGR 308 compared to their naturalised congeners (Schlaepfer et al., 2010). Our results did not support the hypothesis since the RGR of *M. pulegium* was comparable to the RGR of the 309 310 naturalised species whereas the RGR of Z. aethiopica was significantly lower than that of 311 the naturalised species regardless of the treatment. The relatively poor responsiveness of 312 the invasive Z. aethiopica to enriched resources may be due to its rhizomatous nature 313 where the active growth sites are in the substrate unlike the other species that have 314 creeping stolons. Although the belowground structures rarely covered more than 80% of 315 the substrate volume, it is possible that Z. aethiopica growth may have been constrained to 316 some extent by the tub size relative to the plant size as has been demonstrated for many 317 species in similar experiments (Poorter et al., 2012a). For instance, the CO<sub>2</sub> effect on 318 biomass production of *Vallisneria americana*, a submerged species with its meristem in 319 the substrate, has been shown to be significantly influenced by pot size (Titus & 320 Wendlberger, 2016). Alternatively, the Z. aethiopica plants in our experiment could be 321 hybrids or slow-growing cultivars that have been artificially selected and bred by the 322 nurseries.

We then hypothesised that the plants grown under elevated  $[CO_2]$  and/or low nutrient concentration would allocate more biomass to their roots compared to their counterparts grown under ambient  $[CO_2]$  or high nutrient concentration respectively. The R:S of *M. aquatica* was not affected by either CO<sub>2</sub> or nutrient enrichment while that of *Z. aethiopica* increased under nutrient enrichment but was unaffected by  $[CO_2]$ . Since rhizomes serve as storage and reproductive organs, it is not surprising that belowground biomass of *Z. aethiopica* was higher under enriched nutrient conditions compared to under

330	low nutrient availability. Consistent with findings for congeners L. grandiflora and L.
331	peploides, the R:S of L. palustris increased in response to low nutrient concentration
332	(Hussner, 2010) as well as elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ]. In contrast, the R:S of <i>R. nasturtium-aquaticum</i>
333	increased under elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] but not under low nutrient concentration while the that of
334	M. pulegium increased under low nutrient concentration but not under elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ].
335	These findings suggest that plant species tend to allocate more biomass to the acquisition
336	of the most limiting resource (Arp, 1991), but not invariably. The lack of R:S
337	responsiveness to elevated CO <sub>2</sub> by a majority of our study species is consitent with the
338	findings for most terrestrial plant species (Poorter et al., 2012b).
220	
339	We hypothesised that elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] and low nutrient concentration would result

340 in reduced SLA in the study species compared to under ambient  $[CO_2]$  and high nutrient

341 concentration respectively. In terms of [CO<sub>2</sub>], our findings supported this hypothesis with

342 three of the study species (exceptions being the two *Mentha* spp.) having reduced SLAs

343 under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>]. This reduction in SLA under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] is normally attributed

344 to increased leaf density per unit leaf area due to accumulation of non-structural

345 compounds such as starch and increased leaf thickness (Poorter & Navas, 2003;

346 Ainsworth & Long, 2005). However, we found that nutrient concentration did not affect

the SLA of any of the study species, contrary to observations from an analysis of 22

348 herbaceous terrestrial species (Meziane & Shipley, 1999). It has been suggested that

349 nutrient effect on SLA is strongly dependent on other environmental factors (Meziane &

350 Shipley, 1999; Anacker *et al.*, 2011). Since there was no interaction between [CO<sub>2</sub>] and

351 nutrient concentration on the growth and R:S allocation of most of our study species, it is

352 therefore not surprising there was no SLA response to nutrient treatment.

Further, we predicted that the invasive species would have higher SLA values compared to naturalised species. However, our results did not follow this trend with the invasive *Z. aethiopica* having the lowest SLA of all the study species, consistent with its relatively slow RGR. In addition, the lack of aboveground stem for support makes it necessary for *Z. aethiopica* leaves to be structurally strong thereby contributing to the low SLA values (Leishman *et al.*, 2007).

In conclusion, the effects of [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient enrichment on the study species 359 360 was species-specific and less linked to their invasive status. Surprisingly, growth 361 responses to elevated  $[CO_2]$  were not enhanced by increased nutrient availability, 362 suggesting that other factors such as light may be limiting. We acknowledge that in a 363 comparative study with relatively few species, species selection could have a strong 364 influence on overall findings. In the case of this study, we were constrained in our species 365 selection by the availability of the species. However, we tried to select species with similar 366 growth habits (emergent) that also utilise a similar photosynthetic pathway  $(C_3)$ , thus 367 reducing between-species variation. Nonetheless, Z. aethiopica, the invasive rhizomatous 368 species, showed a markedly lower RGR relative to the creeping emergent species, 369 suggesting that it may not have been suitable for comparison purposes in this study. The 370 invasive and naturalised creeping emergent species on the other hand, had similar RGR 371 regardless of [CO<sub>2</sub>] or nutrient concentration, suggesting that they are likely to respond 372 similarly to global environmental change. While this study contributes to our species-level 373 understanding of how emergent freshwater may respond to ongoing global environmental 374 change, we propose future research efforts should concentrate on determining the 375 consequences of these responses on competitive interactions and community-level 376 processes in freshwater systems.

377

#### 378 Acknowledgements

- We are grateful to Dr. Muhammad Masood for his assistance with glasshouseoperations.
- 381

```
382 References
```

- Ainsworth E.A. & Long S.P. (2005) What have we learned from 15 years of free-air CO<sub>2</sub>
   enrichment (FACE)? A meta-analytic review of the responses of photosynthesis,
- 385 canopy properties and plant production to rising CO<sub>2</sub>. *New Phytologist*, **165**, 351-
- 386 372.
- 387 Anacker B., Rajakaruna N., Ackerly D., Harrison S., Keeley J. & Vasey M. (2011)
- 388 Ecological strategies in California chaparral: Interacting effects of soils, climate,
- and fire on specific leaf area. *Plant Ecology & Diversity*, **4**, 179-188.
- 390 Arp W. (1991) Effects of source-sink relations on photosynthetic acclimation to elevated
- 391 CO<sub>2</sub>. *Plant, Cell & Environment*, **14**, 869-875.
- Bowes G. (1993) Facing the inevitable: Plants and increasing atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub>. *Annual Review of Plant Biology*, 44, 309-332.
- Cao J. & Ruan H. (2015) Responses of the submerged macrophyte *Vallisneria natans* to
  elevated CO<sub>2</sub> and temperature. *Aquatic Biology*, 23, 119-127.
- Carpenter S.R., Stanley E.H. & Vander Zanden M.J. (2011) State of the world's freshwater
   ecosystems: Physical, chemical, and biological changes. *Annual Review of*
- 398 *Environment and Resources*, **36**, 75-99.
- 399 Craine J.M. (2006) Competition for nutrients and optimal root allocation. *Plant and Soil*,
- 400 **285,** 171-185.

- 401 Dülger E., Heidbüchel P., Schumann T., Mettler-Altmann T. & Hussner A. (2017)
- 402 Interactive effects of nitrate concentrations and carbon dioxide on the
- 403 stoichiometry, biomass allocation and growth rate of submerged aquatic plants.
- 404 *Freshwater Biology*, **62**, 1094-1104.
- 405 Duursma D.E., Gallagher R.V., Roger E., Hughes L., Downey P.O. & Leishman M.R.
- 406 (2013) Next-generation invaders? Hotspots for naturalised sleeper weeds in

407 Australia under future climates. *Plos One*, **8**, e84222.

- 408 Fan S., Liu C., Yu D. & Xie D. (2013) Differences in leaf nitrogen content,
- 409 photosynthesis, and resource-use efficiency between *Eichhornia crassipes* and a
- 410 native plant *Monochoria vaginalis* in response to altered sediment nutrient levels.
- 411 *Hydrobiologia*, **711**, 129-137.
- 412 Fernandez-Going B., Even T. & Simpson J. (2013) The effect of different nutrient
- 413 concentrations on the growth rate and nitrogen storage of watercress (*Nasturtium*414 *officinale* R. Br.). *Hydrobiologia*, **705**, 63-74.
- 415 Gallardo B., Clavero M., Sánchez M.I. & Vilà M. (2016) Global ecological impacts of
- 416 invasive species in aquatic ecosystems. *Global Change Biology*, **22**, 151-163.
- 417 Groves R. (2006) Are some weeds sleeping? Some concepts and reasons. *Euphytica*, 148,
  418 111-120.
- Hastwell G.T., Daniel A.J. & Vivian-Smith G. (2008) Predicting invasiveness in exotic
  species: do subtropical native and invasive exotic aquatic plants differ in their
- 421 growth responses to macronutrients? *Diversity and Distributions*, **14**, 243-251.
- 422 Hely S.E.L. & Roxburgh S.H. (2005) The interactive effects of elevated CO<sub>2</sub>, temperature
- 423 and initial size on growth and competition between a native  $C_3$  and an invasive  $C_3$
- 424 grass. *Plant Ecology*, **177**, 85-98.

- 425 Hulme P.E. (2009) Trade, transport and trouble: managing invasive species pathways in an 426 era of globalization. Journal of Applied Ecology, 46, 10-18.
- 427 Hussner A. (2010) Growth response and root system development of the invasive
- 428 Ludwigia grandiflora and Ludwigia peploides to nutrient availability and water
- 429 level. Fundamental and Applied Limnology/Archiv für Hydrobiologie, 177, 189-
- 430 196.
- 431 Hussner A., Hofstra D., Jahns P. & Clayton J. (2014) Response capacity to CO<sub>2</sub> depletion 432 rather than temperature and light effects explain the growth success of three alien 433 Hydrocharitaceae compared with native *Myriophyllum triphyllum* in New Zealand.
- 434 Aquatic Botany, 120, 205-211.
- 435 Hussner A. & Jahns P. (2015) European native Myriophyllum spicatum showed a higher
- 436 HCO<sub>3</sub>-use capacity than alien invasive *Myriophyllum heterophyllum*.
- 437 *Hydrobiologia*, **746**, 171.
- 438 Hussner A., Mettler-Altmann T., Weber A.P. & Sand-Jensen K. (2016) Acclimation of

439 photosynthesis to supersaturated  $CO_2$  in aquatic plant bicarbonate users.

- 440 *Freshwater Biology*, **61**, 1720-1732.
- 441 Keller R.P., Geist J., Jeschke J.M. & Kühn I. (2011) Invasive species in Europe: Ecology, 442 status, and policy. Environmental Sciences Europe, 23, 23.
- 443 Leishman M.R., Haslehurst T., Ares A. & Baruch Z. (2007) Leaf trait relationships of 444 native and invasive plants: Community-and global-scale comparisons. New 445
- Phytologist, 176, 635-643.
- 446 Leishman M.R. & Thomson V.P. (2005) Experimental evidence for the effects of
- additional water, nutrients and physical disturbance on invasive plants in low 447
- 448 fertility Hawkesbury Sandstone soils, Sydney, Australia. Journal of Ecology, 93,
- 449 38-49.

- 450 Liu J.-Z., Ge Y.-M., Zhou Y.-F. & Tian G.-M. (2010) Effects of elevated CO<sub>2</sub> on growth
- 451 and nutrient uptake of *Eichhornia crassipes* under four different nutrient levels.
  452 *Water, Air, & Soil Pollution,* 212, 387-394.
- 453 Lytle S.T. (2003) Adaptation and acclimation of populations of Ludwigia repens to
  454 growth in high-and lower-CO<sub>2</sub> springs. Doctoral dissertation, University of
  455 Florida.
- Meziane D. & Shipley B. (1999) Interacting determinants of specific leaf area in 22
  herbaceous species: effects of irradiance and nutrient availability. *Plant, Cell & Environment*, 22, 447-459.
- Nie M., Lu M., Bell J., Raut S. & Pendall E. (2013) Altered root traits due to elevated
  CO<sub>2</sub>: a meta-analysis. *Global Ecology and Biogeography*, 22, 1095-1105.
- Pedersen O. & Sand-Jensen K. (1997) Transpiration does not control growth and nutrient
  supply in the amphibious plant *Mentha aquatica*. *Plant, Cell & Environment,* 20,
- 463 117-123.
- 464 Poorter H., Bühler J., Van Dusschoten D., Climent J. & Postma J.A. (2012a) Pot size
  465 matters: a meta-analysis of the effects of rooting volume on plant growth.
  466 *Functional Plant Biology*, **39**, 839-850.
- 467 Poorter H. & Nagel O. (2000) The role of biomass allocation in the growth response of
  468 plants to different levels of light, CO<sub>2</sub>, nutrients and water: a quantitative review.
  469 *Functional Plant Biology*, 27, 1191-1191.
- 470 Poorter, H., Niklas, K. J., Reich, P. B., Oleksyn, J., Poot, P., & Mommer, L. (2012b).
- Biomass allocation to leaves, stems and roots: Meta-analyses of interspecific
  variation and environmental control. *New Phytologist*, **193**, 30-50.
- 473 Poorter H. & Navas M.L. (2003) Plant growth and competition at elevated CO<sub>2</sub>: On
- 474 winners, losers and functional groups. *New Phytologist*, **157**, 175-198.

- 475 Randall R.P. (2007) *The introduced flora of Australia and its weed status*, CRC for
  476 Australian Weed Management Adelaide.
- 477 Reich P.B., Hobbie S.E., Lee T., Ellsworth D.S., West J.B., Tilman D., Knops J.M.H.,
- 478 Naeem S. & Trost J. (2006) Nitrogen limitation constrains sustainability of
  479 ecosystem response to CO<sub>2</sub>. *Nature*, 440, 922.
- 480 Reich P.B., Hungate B.A. & Luo Y. (2006) Carbon-nitrogen interactions in terrestrial
- 481 ecosystems in response to rising atmospheric carbon dioxide. *Annual Review of*482 *Ecology, Evolution, and Systematics*, **37**, 611-636.
- 483 Rejmánková E.K. (1992) Ecology of creeping macrophytes with special reference to
  484 *Ludwigia peploides* (H.B.K.) Raven. *Aquatic Botany*, 43, 283-299.
- 485 Ricciardi A. & Kipp R. (2008) Predicting the number of ecologically harmful exotic
- 486 species in an aquatic system. *Diversity and Distributions*, **14**, 374-380.
- 487 Riis T., Olesen B., Clayton J.S., Lambertini C., Brix H. & Sorrell B.K. (2012) Growth and
  488 morphology in relation to temperature and light availability during the
- inorphotogy in relation to temperature and right availability during the
- 489 establishment of three invasive aquatic plant species. *Aquatic Botany*, **102**, 56-64.
- 490 Schlaepfer D.R., Glättli M., Fischer M. & Van Kleunen M. (2010) A multi-species
- 491 experiment in their native range indicates pre-adaptation of invasive alien plant
  492 species. *New Phytologist*, **185**, 1087-1099.
- 493 Scott J.K., Batchelor K.L., Ota N. & Yeoh P.B. Modelling climate change impacts on
- 494 sleeper and alert weeds. In: *Proceedings of the 16th Australian Weeds Conference*,
- 495 *Cairns Convention Centre, North Queensland, Australia, 18-22 May, 2008, pp.*
- 496 143-1452008. Queensland Weed Society.
- 497 Silveira M.J. & Thomaz S.M. (2015) Growth of a native versus an invasive submerged
  498 aquatic macrophyte differs in relation to mud and organic matter concentrations in
  499 sediment. *Aquatic Botany*, **124**, 85-91.

- 500 Sorte C.J., Ibáñez I., Blumenthal D.M., Molinari N.A., Miller L.P., Grosholz E.D., Diez
- 501 J.M., D'antonio C.M., Olden J.D. & Jones S.J. (2013) Poised to prosper? A cross-
- system comparison of climate change effects on native and non-native species
  performance. *Ecology Letters*, **16**, 261-270.
- 504 Titus J.E. & Wendlberger S.J. (2016) Gauging submersed plant response to CO<sub>2</sub>
  505 enrichment: Pot size matters. *Aquatic Botany*, **134**, 82-86.
- 506 Van Kleunen M., Weber E. & Fischer M. (2010) A meta-analysis of trait differences
- 507 between invasive and non-invasive plant species. *Ecology Letters*, **13**, 235-245.
- 508 Van T.K., Wheeler G.S. & Center T.D. (1999) Competition between *Hydrilla verticillata*
- and *Vallisneria americana* as influenced by soil fertility. *Aquatic Botany*, **62**, 225233.
- 511 Wersal R.M. & Madsen J.D. (2011) Influences of water column nutrient loading on
- 512 growth characteristics of the invasive aquatic macrophyte *Myriophyllum*

513 *aquaticum* (Vell.) Verdc. *Hydrobiologia*, **665**, 93-105.

- 514 Williamson M.H. & Fitter A. (1996) The characters of successful invaders. *Biological*
- 515 *Conservation*, **78**, 163-170.
- 516 Yan X., Yu D. & Li Y.-K. (2006) The effects of elevated CO<sub>2</sub> on clonal growth and
- 517 nutrient content of submerge plant Vallisneria spinulosa. Chemosphere, 62, 595-
- 518 601.
- 519

## **CHAPTER SIX**

# Are interactions between the native *Azolla filiculoides* and exotic *Salvinia molesta* mediated by elevated CO<sub>2</sub> and nutrient enrichment?

This chapter has been submitted to Aquatic Sciences.

My contribution to the research and paper: Concept – 90%; Data collection – 100%; Analysis – 100%; Writing – 90?%

#### 1 Abstract

2 Ongoing global environmental changes such as rising atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> 3 concentration ([CO<sub>2</sub>]) and nutrient enrichment may modify the competitive interactions 4 between co-occurring plant species. In this study we used a glasshouse experiment to test 5 the effect of elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient enrichment on competition between two free-6 floating fern species that co-occur in south-eastern Australia - native Azolla filiculoides 7 and invasive exotic Salvinia molesta. We grew the species in monoculture and 8 competition, and replaced the nutrient medium weekly to simulate a dynamic system. We 9 found that the relative growth rate (RGR) of both species was greater under high resource 10 conditions (elevated  $[CO_2]$ , high nutrients) with neither having a decrease in RGR when 11 grown in competition. On the contrary, A. filiculoides had a facilitative effect on S. 12 molesta. In addition, A. filiculoides gained more biomass under high resource conditions 13 relative to S. molesta and the opposite was true under low resource conditions. We 14 conclude that [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient concentration did not mediate competition between the 15 species but instead influenced RGR independent of competition. These findings suggest 16 that species composition in dynamic water bodies will in the future likely be determined 17 by the species' responses to environmental changes rather than by changes in competitive interactions. 18

Key words: competitive interactions, free-floating species, freshwater system, global
change, invasive, native

21

22

23

#### 24 Introduction

25 Invasive exotic plant species constitute a major problem in many freshwater 26 systems as they affect both the economic and recreational value of these systems 27 (Dudgeon et al., 2006; Riis et al., 2012), as well as causing a decrease in the abundance 28 and diversity of co-occurring native species (Gallardo et al., 2016). These decreases can 29 happen indirectly due to the invasive exotic species altering the physical and chemical 30 properties of the water thereby creating novel environmental conditions that the native 31 species are less well adapted to (Strayer, 2010; Gallardo et al., 2016), and/or directly 32 through competition for resources (Agami & Reddy, 1990). Direct competition for 33 resources is considered the most important form of plant interactions (Gopal & Goel, 34 1993) as it has the strongest influence on the abundance, diversity and distribution of 35 species (Tilman, 2000). This is particularly relevant to freshwater communities where the 36 dominance of invasive exotic plant species is often attributed to their superior competitive 37 abilities that suppress native species (Barrat-Segretain & Elger, 2004). For example, the 38 invasive exotic *Myriophyllum spicatum* (parrot's feather) has competitively displaced 13 39 of the 20 co-occurring native species and significantly reduced the abundance of the 40 remaining native species in Lake George, New York, United States (Boylen, Eichler & 41 Madsen, 1999).

42 Currently, the earth is experiencing an unprecedented level of change in a range of 43 environmental factors including rising atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentration ([CO2]) and 44 nutrient enrichment (Walther *et al.*, 2002). Consequently, an important applied question in 45 ecological research is whether the competitive interactions between invasive exotic and 46 native plant species will be affected by these changes (Manea & Leishman, 2011). Many 47 studies have shown that plants tend to have faster growth rates in response to elevated

48 [CO<sub>2</sub>] (Poorter, 1993). However, the degree of the response is often species-specific and 49 depends largely on nutrient supply not being limited (Oren et al., 2001; Poorter & Navas, 50 2003; Reich et al., 2006), as well as the functional group of the plants (Robinson, Ryan & 51 Newman, 2012). For example, nitrogen (N)-fixing species tend to respond more strongly 52 to CO<sub>2</sub> enrichment compared to other species that are not capable of fixing N since their 53 nodules represent additional carbon sinks (Poorter, 1993; Wang et al., 2012). 54 Responsiveness to  $CO_2$  enrichment may also depend on the origin of the species. For 55 example, it has been demonstrated in an open-top chamber  $CO_2$  enrichment experiment 56 that the invasive exotic wetland species Typha angustifolia (narrow-leaved cattail) had a 57 stronger growth response compared to the congeneric native species, T. latifolia (broadleaf 58 cattail) (Sullivan et al., 2010). By differentially stimulating species' growth rates, elevated 59 [CO<sub>2</sub>] may modify competitive interactions between native and exotic invasive plant 60 species. For terrestrial species, the shift in competitive interactions between native and 61 invasive exotics in response to elevated  $[CO_2]$  has received some attention (Poorter & 62 Navas, 2003; Hely & Roxburgh, 2005; Manea & Leishman, 2011; Liu et al., 2017). In 63 contrast, our understanding for aquatic species and in particular freshwater species is much more limited. 64

65 In freshwater systems, nutrients are the most important limiting resource for which 66 plants compete (Gopal & Goel, 1993). Over the last half a century, freshwater systems 67 have experienced significant nutrient enrichment as a result of human activities 68 (Carpenter, Stanley & Vander Zanden, 2011; Wersal & Madsen, 2011). A consequence of 69 this nutrient enrichment is that it makes these systems more vulnerable to exotic plant 70 invasions (Chytrý et al., 2008) due to many exotic species having enhanced competitive 71 ability relative to native species under these conditions (Daehler, 2003). For example, it 72 has been experimentally demonstrated that stronger growth response to nutrient

73 enrichment allowed the invasive exotic Hydrilla verticillata (water thyme) to have a 74 competitive edge over the native Vallisneria americana (American eelgrass) (Van, 75 Wheeler & Center, 1999). Similarly, the invasive exotic *Lemna minuta* (least duckweed) 76 was shown to be a better competitor against the native L. minor (common duckweed) in 77 eutrophic as opposed to mesotrophic conditions (Gérard & Triest, 2018). This can 78 subsequently alter the structure and function of these systems at a broader scale (Scheffer 79 et al., 2003) and therefore potentially constitutes a major threat to these systems 80 (Njambuya, Stiers & Triest, 2011).

81 It is often the case that multiple global change environmental factors interact with 82 one another to modify competitive interactions between native and invasive exotic plant 83 species (Netten et al., 2010; Stiers, Njambuya & Triest, 2011). For example, increased 84 temperature has been shown to favour the invasive exotic Salvinia natans under enriched 85 nutrient conditions at the expense of native submerged species (Netten et al., 2010). One 86 of the most well documented interactions between global change environmental factors is 87 that between rising atmospheric  $[CO_2]$  and nutrient enrichment as they can have a strong 88 synergistic effect on plant growth (Bornette & Puijalon, 2011; Low-Décarie, Bell & 89 Fussmann, 2015). For example, the responsiveness of water hyacinth, Eichhornia 90 crassipes (an invasive exotic freshwater species) growth to CO<sub>2</sub> enrichment has been 91 shown to be more pronounced under eutrophic conditions compared to oligotrophic 92 conditions (Liu et al., 2010). It is therefore likely that elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] coupled with nutrient 93 enrichment will modify the competitive interactions between species with contrasting 94 origins.

In aquatic systems, competition is believed to be most intense between species
with similar growth forms that occupy similar positions in the water column (Gopal &

97 Goel, 1993). Among the various growth forms of freshwater plants, free-floating species 98 have the greatest detrimental impact on freshwater systems as they significantly alter 99 habitat structure and create more anoxic environments which in turn has a cascading effect 100 on animal diversity (Scheffer et al., 2003; Villamagna & Murphy, 2010). Free-floating 101 species have also been shown to be extremely responsive to [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient enrichment 102 (Scheffer et al., 2003; Feuchtmayr et al., 2009; Netten et al., 2010). Despite this, there 103 are only a few studies that have tested how global change environmental factors have 104 altered the competitive interactions between native and invasive exotic free-floating 105 freshwater species. Furthermore, the majority of these studies have focused on competition 106 between native and invasive species from the genus Lemna (Njambuya, Stiers & Triest, 2011; Ceschin et al., 2018; Gérard & Triest, 2018; Paolacci, Jansen & Harrison, 2018). 107 108 Therefore, the aim of this study was to test the effect of  $[CO_2]$  and nutrient concentration 109 on the growth, biomass allocation and competitive ability of two free-floating ferns, the 110 native Azolla filiculoides (water fern; Azollaceae) and the invasive exotic Salvinia molesta 111 (salvinia; Salviniaceae), which commonly co-occur in freshwater systems in south eastern 112 Australia. We did this by growing the species in a three-way factorial glasshouse 113 experiment with two [CO<sub>2</sub>] (ambient and elevated), two nutrient concentrations (low and 114 high), and three competition treatments (monocultures of each species and both species in 115 competition). We then measured the relative growth rates (RGR), root to shoot ratio (R:S) 116 and maximum root length of the species in each treatment combination. We calculated the 117 RGR instead of the analysing the final biomass because the initial biomass of a species in 118 the competition treatment was 50% of its initial biomass in the monoculture treatment. 119 These traits were selected as they have important effects on resource exploitation and tend 120 to be influenced by elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>], nutrient availability and competition. For example, 121 plants tend to allocate more biomass to their roots when grown in CO<sub>2</sub> enriched and

122	nutrient-poor conditions in order to optimise acquisition of the most limiting resource						
123	(Arp, 1991; Craine, 2006; Nie et al., 2013). Furthermore, both [CO <sub>2</sub> ] and nutrient						
124	concentration affect root length which influences the ability of a species to pre-empt						
125	nutrient supply in the presence of competitors (Craine, 2006; Nie et al., 2013).						
126	Both study species belong to the order Salvinales and fix atmospheric CO <sub>2</sub> via the						
127	C <sub>3</sub> pathway and are thus expected to respond positively to elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ], assuming						
128	nutrient supply is not limited (Ray et al., 1979; Longstreth, 1989). Azolla filiculoides						
129	hosts symbiotic N-fixing cyanobacteria Anabaena azollae within its leaf cavities (Wagner,						
130	1997) and is therefore not N-limited (Espinar et al., 2015). This means that irrespective of						
131	the nutrient supply in the water column, it should respond positively to elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ]. In						
132	contrast, S. molesta does not fix N but rather absorbs nutrients from the water column						

133 through the underside of its floating leaves and the highly dissected submerged leaves

134 (roots hereafter) (Julien & Bourne, 1986). This means that S. molesta's response to

135 elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] may be mediated by the nutrient supply in the water column.

- 136 Thus we predicted that:
- 137 (i) in the absence of competition, both species will have highest RGR under 138 elevated  $[CO_2]$  in the high nutrient treatment.
- 139 (ii) RGR of both species will be suppressed in the competition treatment but S. 140 *molesta* (exotic) will have a higher RGR relative to *A. filiculoides* (native)
- 141 under high resource conditions and the opposite will be true for low resource 142 conditions.
- 143 (iii) regardless of competition, elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] and low nutrient concentration will 144 each result in increased biomass allocation to roots, and relatively longer roots 145 in both species.

#### 146 Methods

#### 147 **Plant collection and preparation**

*Salvinia molesta* plants were collected from a wild population at Lake Munmorah,
Wyong, New South Wales (NSW), Australia (33.1923°S, 151.5749°E) and *A. filiculoides*plants were collected from an artificial pond at Macquarie University Plant Growth
Facility, North Ryde, NSW, Australia (33.7745° S, 151.1169° E). The plants were
maintained in tubs containing tap water for three weeks prior to being prepared for
planting.

154 Prior to the start of the experiment, similar sized S. molesta rhizome sections (fresh 155 weight: 0.25 g  $\pm$  0.05 SD) each consisting of four leaves and an apical bud were selected. 156 A sub-sample of 20 plantlets were randomly selected, oven-dried at 70°C for 48 hours and 157 weighed using an analytical electronic balance (Mettler Toledo, Port Melbourne, VIC, 158 Australia). Similarly, 20 frond portions of A. *filiculoides* of similar fresh weights (0.9 g  $\pm$ 159 0.05 SD) were oven-dried and weighed as described above. In order to ensure equivalent 160 biomass of the species at the start of the experiment, we calculated the ratio of the mean 161 fresh weight to the mean dry weight of A. filliculoides frond portions to determine the 162 fresh weight of the species that would be equivalent in dry weight to one S. molesta 163 plantlet. It was thus determined that in order to obtain one S. molesta dry weight (0.021 g 164  $\pm$  0.003 SD) worth of A. *filiculoides*, 0.3 g fresh weight of Azolla fronds were required.

165 Experimental design

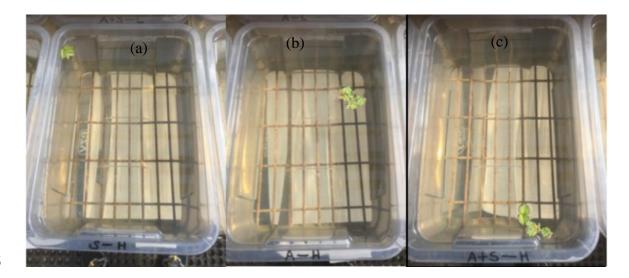
The experiment was conducted in climate controlled glasshouses at the Plant
Growth Facility of Macquarie University beginning on 5-6<sup>th</sup> September 2017. The
temperature of the glasshouses was maintained at 25°C/20°C day/night producing water

temperatures of 24°C/19°C day/night. This temperature range is consistent with the mean
summer water temperatures of the lower Hawkesbury River, NSW, Australia (Sydney
Water, unpublished data) which is one of the major freshwater systems in south eastern
Australia where the study species commonly co-occur. In addition to temperature,
humidity (65-75%) and photosynthetically active radiation (230-870 µmol m<sup>-2</sup> s<sup>-1</sup> at 2 pm)
of the glasshouses were continuously monitored using a Multi-grow Controller System
(Autogrow Systems, Auckland, New Zealand).

176 For the experiment, we used 10-L transparent plastic tubs each containing 8 L of 177 reverse osmosis water to which 2 mL of undiluted Seasol, a nitrogen- and phosphorus-free 178 organic concentrate (Seasol International Pty Ltd, Bayswater, VIC, Australia), was added 179 to supply potassium and micro-nutrients. The experiment utilised a three-way factorial 180 design with two [CO<sub>2</sub>] (ambient: 380–420 ppm, elevated: 580–620 ppm), two nutrient concentrations (low: 0.3 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub>  $L^{-1}$ , 0.02 mg P-PO<sub>4</sub>  $L^{-1}$ , high: 1.5 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub>  $L^{-1}$ , 0.1 181 182 mg P-PO<sub>4</sub>  $L^{-1}$ ), and three competition treatments (A. *filiculoides* monoculture, S. *molesta* 183 monoculture and both species in competition). Pre-prepared solutions of sodium nitrate 184 and sodium phosphate were used to supply nitrogen and phosphorus at concentrations 185 specified by the different nutrient treatments. These nutrient concentrations are 186 representative of the levels found at fairly undisturbed (low nutrient) and disturbed (high 187 nutrient) sites in the Hawkesbury-Nepean river system of Sydney region (Pinto, 188 Maheshwari & Ollerton, 2013) where the study species co-occur. Each treatment 189 combination was replicated ten times resulting in a total of 120 tubs, which were evenly 190 split across four glasshouses (two ambient and two elevated  $[CO_2]$ ). These  $CO_2$ 191 concentrations were maintained and monitored daily by a CO<sub>2</sub> dosing and monitoring 192 system (Canary Company Pty Ltd, Lane Cove, NSW, Australia).

193 Within each tub, the same fresh weight of each species equivalent to the dry weight 194 of one S. molesta plantlet was used as the starting biomass (Figure 1). This meant that 0.3 195  $g \pm 0.05$  SD and 0.25  $g \pm 0.05$  SD fresh weights of A. filiculoides and S. molesta 196 respectively were placed in the monoculture tubs at the start of the experiment. For the 197 competition tubs, half of these fresh weights of each species were placed in each tub. The 198 plants were grown for seven weeks at which point some tubs had 90% coverage of the 199 water surface. Throughout the duration of the experiment, the nutrient medium was 200 replaced with fresh medium on a weekly basis after cleaning the tubs thoroughly to 201 remove any periphytic algae. In addition to controlling competition from algae, nutrient 202 replacement was also meant to simulate a dynamic system (e.g. rivers, creeks) where 203 water residence time is relatively short. The tubs were also randomly reassigned a new 204 position within the same glasshouse at these times to reduce any within-glasshouse effects.

205



206

- 207 Figure 1: Photos showing (a) S. molesta monoculture, (b) A. filiculoides monoculture, and
- 208 (c) both species in competition at the start of the experiment.

209

#### 211 Measurements and harvesting

212	After the seven week growth period, the relative growth rate (RGR), root to shoot
213	ratio (R:S-root dry weight/shoot dry weight) and maximum root length were measured for
214	each plant. To do this plants were harvested and separated into their shoot and root
215	biomass. The biomass components were then oven-dried and weighed as described above.
216	RGR of each plant was then calculated as follows:
217	$RGR = (lnW_2 - lnW_1)/T$ , where $W_2 = final dry weight$ , $W_1 = initial dry weight$ , and
41/	$KOK = (m w_2 - m w_1)/1$ , where $w_2 = matury$ weight, $w_1 = mutatury$ weight, and

218 T = duration of experiment (days).

To determine species' competitive responses in each of the competition tubs, we calculated the difference in the relative growth rates between the two species (RGRD) (Connolly & Wayne, 2005) using the following equation:  $RGRD = RGR_{Salvinia} - RGR_{Azolla}$ , where a value > 0 indicates that *S. molesta* gained comparatively more biomass than *A*.

filiculoides and vice versa for a value < 0.

#### 224 Statistical analysis

225 The effect of [CO<sub>2</sub>], nutrient concentration, and competition on the RGR and root 226 length of the species were assessed using a three-way ANOVA for each species. The RGR 227 data were log<sub>10</sub>-square root-transformed to meet the assumptions of ANOVA while the 228 raw root length data were normally distributed and did not require any transformation. 229 Where an interaction was detected, Tukey HSD post-hoc analysis was used to determine 230 the differences between treatment combinations. The R:S data were not normally 231 distributed even when transformed so non-parametric Kruskal-Wallis analyses were used 232 to analyse each factor ([CO<sub>2</sub>], nutrients, competition) individually for each species. 233 Finally, the effect of [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient concentration on the RGRD of the competition

tubs was assessed using a two-way ANOVA. The RGRD data were normally distributedand hence did not need transformation.

236	It should be noted that plants that died during the course of the experiment (one $A$ .
237	filiculoides and eight S. molesta) and their corresponding competition treatment pair were
238	excluded from the analyses. All analyses were performed using SPSS statistical software,
239	version 25 (IBM, Chicago, IL, USA), with significance level set at $P < 0.05$ .
240	

#### 241 **Results**

#### 242 Azolla filiculoides

The RGR of *A. filiculoides* was 41% higher under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] compared to ambient [CO<sub>2</sub>] ( $F_{1,71} = 69.036$ , *P* < 0.001; Figure 2a), and 59% greater in the high nutrient treatment compared to the low nutrient treatment ( $F_{1,71} = 119.139$ , *P* < 0.001; Figure 2a). In contrast, competition did not influence the RGR of *A. filiculoides* ( $F_{1,71} = 0$ , *P* = 0.985; Figure 2a). There were no significant interactions between any of the treatments for the RGR of *A. filiculoides* (Supplementary Table 1).

The R:S of *A. filiculoides* was reduced by 12% under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] compared with ambient [CO<sub>2</sub>] (H<sub>1, N = 72</sub> = 4.612, P = 0.032; Figure 2b), and by 26% in the high nutrient treatment compared to low nutrient treatment (H<sub>1, N = 72</sub> = 14.476, P < 0.001; Figure 2b). Similarly to RGR, competition did not influence the R:S of *A. filiculoides* (Supplementary Table 2).

Maximum root length of *A. filiculoides* was significantly affected by an interaction between the  $[CO_2]$  and nutrient concentration (F <sub>1,71</sub> = 8.318; *P* = 0.006; Supplementary Table 1). Post-hoc analyses revealed that the maximum root length of plants grown in the

- 257 high nutrient treatment under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] was significantly longer than that of the
- 258 plants grown under the other treatment combinations (all  $P \le 0.013$ ; Figure 2c). Maximum
- root length of *A. filiculoides* was also affected by the competition treatment (F  $_{1,71}$  =
- $260 \quad 6.048; P = 0.018)$  with the maximum root length of the plants grown in monocultures
- being 14% longer than that of the plants grown in competition.

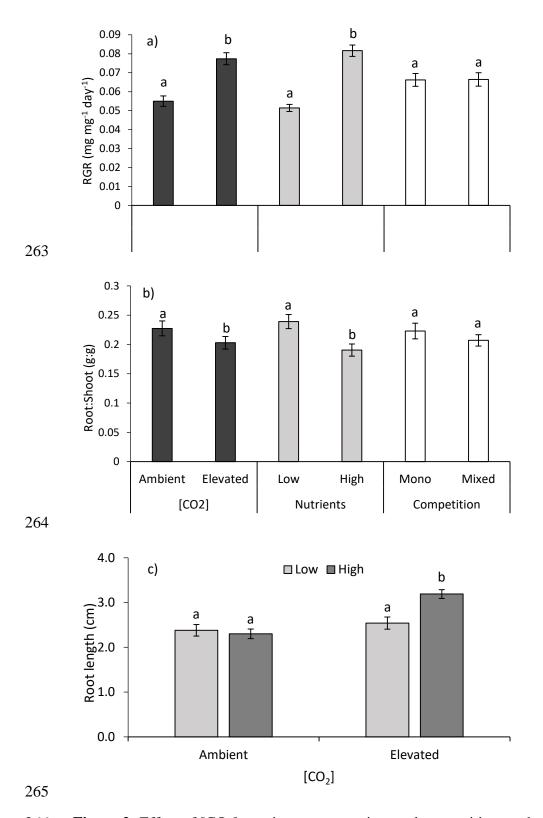


Figure 2: Effect of  $[CO_2]$ , nutrient concentration, and competition on the mean (a) RGR and (b) R:S; and the effect of (c)  $[CO_2] \times$  nutrient concentration on maximum root length,

for *A. filiculoides*. Error bars represent  $\pm 1$  SE and the letters above the error bars indicate significant differences between treatments (*P* <0.05).

#### 270 Salvinia molesta

271 The RGR of S. molesta was significantly affected by an interaction between [CO<sub>2</sub>] 272 and nutrient concentration ( $F_{1, 64} = 14.418$ ; P < 0.001; Supplementary Table 1). Post-hoc 273 analyses revealed that the plants grown under ambient  $[CO_2]$  in low nutrient conditions 274 had significantly lower RGR than plants grown in the other treatment combinations (all P 275 < 0.001; Figure 3a). Furthermore, the plants grown under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] in the low 276 nutrient treatment had significantly lower RGR than the plants grown under elevated 277  $[CO_2]$  in the high nutrient treatment (P = 0.023; Figure 3a). The RGR of S. molesta was 278 also affected by the competition treatment ( $F_{1, 64} = 11.28$ ; P = 0.001) with plants grown in 279 competition having 8% higher RGR than their counterparts grown in monoculture.

The R:S of *S. molesta* was significantly affected by nutrient treatment ( $H_{1, N=72} =$ 52.604, *P* < 0.001) where the plants grown in the low nutrient treatment had 176% greater R:S compared to the plants grown in the high nutrient treatment (Figure 3b). In contrast, the R:S of *S. molesta* was not affected by the [CO<sub>2</sub>] or competition (Supplementary Table 2).

The maximum root length of *S. molesta* was 37% greater under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] (F<sub>1</sub>,  $_{64} = 27.95; P < 0.001;$  Figure 3c) compared to ambient [CO<sub>2</sub>]. In contrast, the nutrient and competition treatments did not affect maximum root length of *S. molesta* (Figure 3c; Supplementary Table 1). 289

290

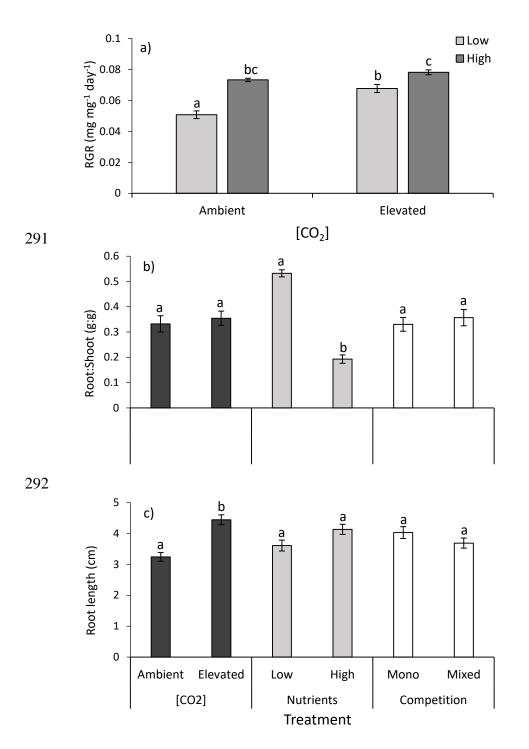


Figure 3: Effect of (a)  $[CO_2] \times$  nutrient concentration on the mean RGR; and the effect of [CO<sub>2</sub>], nutrient concentration, and competition on (b) R:S, and (c) maximum root length of *S. molesta*. Error bars represent ± 1 SE and the letters above the error bars indicate significant differences between treatments (*P* <0.05).

#### 299 Species competitive response

300	The change in relative biomass composition, measured as the difference in RGR of
301	the competing species (RGRD) in response to $[CO_2] \times$ nutrient interaction was
302	significantly different from zero (F <sub>1, 31</sub> = 6.60; $P = 0.015$ ; Figure 4). The RGRD value in
303	the low nutrient treatment under ambient and elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] was 0.012 $\pm$ 0.002 (mean $\pm$
304	SE) and 0.01 $\pm$ 0.002 (mean $\pm$ SE) respectively corresponding to S. molesta having 27%
305	and 13% greater RGR respectively than A. filiculoides. However, the RGRD value under
306	ambient [CO <sub>2</sub> ] in the high nutrient treatment (0.014 $\pm$ 0.008, mean $\pm$ SE) was not
307	significantly different from zero. In contrast, the RGRD value under elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] when
308	the nutrient concentration was high was -0.016 $\pm$ 0.002 (mean $\pm$ SE) corresponding to A.
309	filiculoides having 20% greater RGR compared to S. molesta.

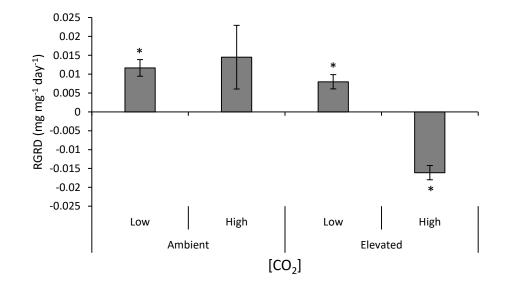


Figure 4: The effect of  $[CO_2]$  and nutrient concentration on RGRD (mean  $\pm$  SE) of the plants grown in the competition tubs. Positive values indicate *S. molesta* gained relatively more biomass compared to *A. filiculoides* while negative values indicate *A. filiculoides* gained relatively more biomass compared to *S. molesta* in the competition tubs. Error bars

```
represent \pm 1 SE and the asterisks (*) indicate where the RGRD values are significantly
different from zero (P <0.05)
```

318 Discussion

319 The aim of this study was to determine how  $[CO_2]$  and altered nutrient conditions 320 may alter the competitive interactions between native and invasive exotic freshwater plant 321 species, using A. filiculoides (native) and S. molesta (exotic) as our study species. We first 322 predicted that an interaction between elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] and high nutrient concentration 323 would result in higher RGR for both species. However, we found that RGR of A. 324 filiculoides was increased under both the elevated CO<sub>2</sub> and high nutrient treatments but 325 there was no interactive effect. This finding is in contrast to that of previous studies where 326 the stimulatory effect of elevated  $[CO_2]$  has been found to be mediated by other 327 environmental factors such as phosphorus availability, temperature and irradiance (Cheng 328 et al., 2010; Espinar et al., 2015; van Kempen et al., 2016). A possible explanation for 329 this may be that the amount of phosphorus supplied in both nutrient treatments was non-330 limiting and that A. *filiculoides* was able to alleviate the nitrate limitation in the low 331 nutrient treatment under elevated  $[CO_2]$  by fixing its own nitrogen (Wagner, 1997). 332 Although A. *filiculoides* had greater growth in the high nutrient compared to low nutrient 333 treatment, the difference in nutrient availability may not have been sufficient to drive an 334 interactive effect. Previous studies have shown similar levels of responsiveness to nutrient 335 enrichment in this species (Cary & Weerts, 1992).

For *S. molesta* we did find an interactive effect between [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient concentration which resulted in faster growth of *S. molesta* under the resource enriched conditions (elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] and high nutrients) compared to low resource conditions.

339 Interestingly, the largest increase in RGR between the treatments occurred under low 340 resource conditions. This was unexpected because the responsiveness of plant growth to 341 elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] is usually greatest when nutrient supply is also high (Poorter & Navas, 342 2003). However, previous studies on S. molesta found that it grew well in low nutrient 343 conditions (Henry-Silva, Camargo & Pezzato, 2008; Tipping et al., 2009). For example, at nitrate concentrations ranging from 0.02 - 0.9 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup>, S. molesta experienced the 344 345 highest growth rate at a mid-range concentration of 0.1 mg N-NO<sub>3</sub> L<sup>-1</sup> (Gufu *et al.*, 2018). 346 It is therefore possible that the low nutrient treatment in our experiment did not limit S. 347 molesta growth and that in the high nutrient treatment, S. molesta might have already been 348 growing at close to its full capacity under ambient  $[CO_2]$  such that an increase in  $[CO_2]$ 349 would have had little effect.

350 In terms of competition effects, we predicted that competition would negatively 351 affect the RGR of both species relative to plants grown in monocultures. We found this 352 not to be the case for S. molesta plants which had a neutral effect on their A. filiculoides 353 neighbours. This finding is similar to that reported for a congeneric species, S. minima, 354 which also had a neutral effect on the growth rate of Azolla caroliniana (Dickinson & 355 Miller, 1998). In contrast, A. filiculoides had a facilitative effect on S. molesta, which has 356 been previously reported for aquatic plant species (Espinar et al., 2002; Boschilia, 357 Oliveira & Thomaz, 2008; Michelan et al., 2010; Wundrow et al., 2012). For example, 358 the long floating stems of Eichhornia azurea were found to provide protection against 359 wind and waves for other co-occurring free-floating species (Boschilia, Oliveira & 360 Thomaz, 2008). Facilitation can also occur when one of the species increases nitrogen 361 availability for the other species through its N-fixation process. However, for our study 362 species, facilitation was unlikely to be a result of *S. molesta* having direct access to excess 363 nitrogen fixed by Anabaena (Azolla nitrogen fixing symbiont) because excess nitrogen is

364 normally conveyed directly to its Azolla host through interconnecting transfer hairs and 365 only becomes available in the water column after mineralisation of the Azolla-Anabaena 366 complex (Wagner, 1997). However, S. molesta may have indirectly had access to this 367 nitrogen through the decomposition of senescent Azolla parts in the water column. It 368 should be noted that other studies have found that A. filiculoides supresses the growth of 369 other free-floating species such as Lemna minor/gibba and L. minuta by overtopping them 370 (Peeters, Neefjes & Zuidam, 2016; Paolacci, Jansen & Harrison, 2018). In our study, 371 overtopping was not observed and given the relatively larger stature of S. molesta, we 372 speculate that even if the experiment had run for longer, A. filiculoides might not have 373 been able to overtop S. molesta.

374 Following on from the above hypothesis, we predicted that although RGR of both 375 species would be suppressed by competition, S. molesta would be more favoured by high 376 resource conditions relative to A. *filiculoides* and vice versa for low resource conditions. 377 The basis for this prediction was that invasive exotics tend to be more responsive to high 378 resource conditions than native species (Dukes & Mooney, 1999; Manea & Leishman, 379 2011; Liu et al., 2017). Surprisingly, we found the opposite to be true for our study 380 species, with S. molesta favoured relatively more under low resource conditions and A. 381 filiculoides favoured relatively more under high resource conditions. A possible 382 explanation for this finding is that the N-fixing ability of A. *filiculoides* means it has a 383 larger carbon and nutrient sink compared to S. molesta and is therefore more responsive to 384 enriched resource conditions. Moreover, A. filiculoides is a fast-growing native species 385 that is considered highly invasive outside its native range (Espinar *et al.*, 2015; van 386 Kempen et al., 2016) thus it is not surprising that it responds similarly to high resource 387 conditions as invasive exotic species.

388	Our final hypothesis predicted that both species would allocate more biomass to
389	their roots under elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] and low nutrient concentration compared to ambient
390	[CO <sub>2</sub> ] and high nutrient concentration respectively. The basis for this prediction is that
391	plants tend to optimise resource acquisition by allocating more biomass to the organs
392	responsible for uptake of the most limiting resources (Bloom, Chapin III & Mooney,
393	1985). For nutrient concentration, our findings supported this hypothesis with both
394	species, particularly S. molesta, allocating significantly more biomass to their roots in the
395	low nutrient treatment. Contrary to our hypothesis, A. filiculoides allocated less biomass to
396	roots under elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] compared to ambient [CO <sub>2</sub> ] while S. molesta did not shift its
397	biomass allocation in response to [CO <sub>2</sub> ]. While we do not know why A. filiculoides
398	allocated more biomass to its roots under ambient CO <sub>2</sub> compared to elevated CO <sub>2</sub> , the lack
399	S. molesta R:S responsiveness to elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] is consistent with findings for many
400	terrestrial C3 species (Poorter & Nagel, 2000; Poorter et al., 2012).

401 We further predicted that elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] and low nutrient concentrations would 402 result in both species producing longer roots, based on the premise that plants tend to 403 maximise their root length in response to elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] and limited nutrient supply 404 (Craine, 2006; Craine & Dybzinski, 2013). As expected, both species produced longer 405 roots under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>]. However, the increase in A. filiculoides root length in response 406 to elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] was dependent on nutrient concentration. Contrary to our expectations, 407 it was the plants grown under elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] in the high nutrient treatment that produced 408 longer roots. Although unexpected, this result is not surprising as fast-growing species 409 such as A. filiculoides require longer roots for the fast and efficient uptake of nutrients 410 needed to sustain rapid growth rates even under enriched resource conditions (Ryser, 411 2006). In contrast, S. molesta root length was not affected by nutrient concentration. A 412 possible explanation for these contrasting results is that S. molesta invested more in

413 production of fine roots as indicated by our R:S results, rather than increasing its root414 length in response to low nutrient availability.

415 In conclusion, our results show that growth of both A. filiculoides and S. molesta 416 was favoured by high resource conditions. However, S. molesta growth was stimulated by 417 an interaction between elevated  $[CO_2]$  and nutrient enrichment, while the growth of A. 418 filiculoides was stimulated by these factors independent of each other. Nevertheless, A. 419 filiculoides was relatively more favoured by high resource conditions than S. molesta. In 420 small enclosed water bodies (e.g. ponds and dams) where space and nutrients are limited, 421 these differing degrees of responsiveness may lead to one species displacing the other 422 depending on the environmental conditions present in the water body. For oligotrophic 423 conditions, we would expect S. molesta to displace A. filiculoides and vice versa for 424 eutrophic conditions. However, for larger more dynamic water bodies (e.g. rivers, creeks) 425 it is likely that this displacement will not occur. This is because in these systems space is 426 usually not limited (depending on currents) and nutrients are constantly replenished 427 (through flow) so there will be little or no competition from neighbours (as we found in 428 this study). Rather, it is the differing growth responses to environmental conditions (e.g. 429 nutrient, CO<sub>2</sub>, temperature) between species that will likely determine the species 430 composition in these systems. From a management point of view, we suggest different 431 strategies need to be implemented depending on the water body. For smaller enclosed 432 water bodies where the risk of species displacement is high but the risk of spread is low, 433 eradication of invasive exotic species should be the primary objective. In contrast, for 434 larger dynamic water bodies where the risk of spread is high but the risk of species 435 displacement is low, prevention of entry of invasive exotic species should be the 436 management goal.

437

## 438 Acknowledgements

439	We are grateful to Dr. Muhammad Masood for valuable assistance with the
440	glasshouse operations and Dr. Anthony Manea for providing useful feedback on earlier
441	versions of this manuscript. We also thank Paul Marynissen for providing the S. molesta
442	propagules.
443	
444	References
445	Agami M. & Reddy K. (1990) Competition for space between Eichhornia crassipes
446	(Mart.) Solms and Pistia stratiotes L. cultured in nutrient-enriched water. Aquatic
447	Botany, <b>38</b> , 195-208.
448	Arp W. (1991) Effects of source-sink relations on photosynthetic acclimation to elevated
449	CO <sub>2</sub> . Plant, Cell & Environment, <b>14</b> , 869-875.
450	Barrat-Segretain M.H. & Elger A. (2004) Experiments on growth interactions between
451	two invasive macrophyte species. Journal of Vegetation Science, 15, 109-114.
452	Bloom A.J., Chapin Iii F.S. & Mooney H.A. (1985) Resource limitation in plants - An
453	economic analogy. Annual Review of Ecology and Systematics, 16, 363-392.
454	Bornette G. & Puijalon S. (2011) Response of aquatic plants to abiotic factors: a review.
455	Aquatic Sciences, 73, 1-14.
456	Boschilia S.M., Oliveira E.F. & Thomaz S.M. (2008) Do aquatic macrophytes co-occur
457	randomly? An analysis of null models in a tropical floodplain. Oecologia, 156,
458	203-214.
459	Boylen C.W., Eichler L.W. & Madsen J.D. (1999) Loss of native aquatic plant species in a

460 community dominated by Eurasian watermilfoil. *Hydrobiologia*, **415**, 207-211.

- 461 Carpenter S.R., Stanley E.H. & Vander Zanden M.J. (2011) State of the world's freshwater
  462 ecosystems: Physical, chemical, and biological changes. *Annual Review of*463 *Environment and Resources*, **36**, 75-99.
- 464 Cary P.R. & Weerts P.G.J. (1992) Growth and nutrient composition of *Azolla pinnata* R.
  465 Brown and *Azolla filiculoides* Lamarck as affected by water temperature, nitrogen
- and phosphorus supply, light intensity and pH. *Aquatic Botany*, **43**, 163-180.
- 467 Ceschin S., Abati S., Leacche I. & Zuccarello V. (2018) Ecological comparison between
  468 duckweeds in central Italy: The invasive *Lemna minuta* vs the native *L. minor*.
- 469 Plant Biosystems An International Journal Dealing with all Aspects of Plant
  470 Biology, 152, 674-683.
- 471 Cheng W., Sakai H., Matsushima M., Yagi K. & Hasegawa T. (2010) Response of the
- 472 floating aquatic fern *Azolla filiculoides* to elevated CO<sub>2</sub>, temperature, and
  473 phosphorus levels. *Hydrobiologia*, **656**, 5-14.
- 474 Chytrý M., Jarošík V., Pyšek P., Hájek O., Knollová I., Tichý L. & Danihelka J. (2008)
- 475 Separating habitat invasibility by alien plants from the actual level of invasion.
  476 *Ecology*, **89**, 1541-1553.
- 477 Connolly J. & Wayne P. (2005) Assessing determinants of community biomass
- 478 composition in two-species plant competition studies. *Oecologia*, **142**, 450-457.
- 479 Craine J.M. (2006) Competition for nutrients and optimal root allocation. *Plant and Soil*,
  480 **285**, 171-185.
- 481 Craine J.M. & Dybzinski R. (2013) Mechanisms of plant competition for nutrients, water
  482 and light. *Functional Ecology*, 27, 833-840.
- 483 Daehler C.C. (2003) Performance comparisons of co-occurring native and alien invasive
   484 plants: implications for conservation and restoration. *Annual Review of Ecology,*
- 485 *Evolution, and Systematics,* **34,** 183-211.

- 486 Dickinson M.B. & Miller T.E. (1998) Competition among small, free-floating, aquatic
  487 plants. *American Midland Naturalist*, 55-67.
- 488 Dudgeon D., Arthington A.H., Gessner M.O., Kawabata Z.-I., Knowler D.J., Lévêque C.,
- 489 Naiman R.J., Prieur-Richard A.-H., Soto D. & Stiassny M.L. (2006) Freshwater
- 490 biodiversity: Importance, threats, status and conservation challenges. *Biological*
- 491 *Reviews*, **81**, 163-182.
- 492 Dukes J.S. & Mooney H.A. (1999) Does global change increase the success of biological
  493 invaders? *Trends in Ecology & Evolution*, 14, 135-139.
- 494 Espinar J.L., Díaz-Delgado R., Bravo-Utrera M.A. & Vilà M. (2015) Linking Azolla
- *filiculoides* invasion to increased winter temperatures in the Doñana marshland
  (SW Spain). *Aquatic Invasions*, **10**, 17-24.
- 497 Espinar J.L., García L.V., García Murillo P. & Toja J. (2002) Submerged macrophyte
- zonation in a Mediterranean salt marsh: A facilitation effect from established
  helophytes? *Journal of Vegetation Science*, 13, 831-840.
- 500 Feuchtmayr H., Moran R., Hatton K., Connor L., Heyes T., Moss B., Harvey I. &
- 501 Atkinson D. (2009) Global warming and eutrophication: effects on water chemistry
- and autotrophic communities in experimental hypertrophic shallow lake
- 503 mesocosms. *Journal of Applied Ecology*, **46**, 713-723.
- Gallardo B., Clavero M., Sánchez M.I. & Vilà M. (2016) Global ecological impacts of
  invasive species in aquatic ecosystems. *Global Change Biology*, 22, 151-163.
- 506 Gérard J. & Triest L. (2018) Competition between invasive *Lemna minuta* and native *L*.
- 507 *minor* in indoor and field experiments. *Hydrobiologia*, **812**, 57-65.
- 508 Gopal B. & Goel U. (1993) Competition and allelopathy in aquatic plant communities.
- 509 *The Botanical Review*, **59**, 155-210.

- Gufu G.D., Manea A., Vorreiter L. & Leishman M.R. (2018) Do invasive exotic and
  native freshwater plant species respond similarly to low additional nitrate doses? *Aquatic Botany*, **151**, 1-8.
  Hely S.E.L. & Roxburgh S.H. (2005) The interactive effects of elevated CO<sub>2</sub>, temperature
  and initial size on growth and competition between a native C<sub>3</sub> and an invasive C<sub>3</sub>
  grass. *Plant Ecology*, **177**, 85-98.
- 516 Henry-Silva G.G., Camargo A.F. & Pezzato M.M. (2008) Growth of free-floating aquatic
- 517 macrophytes in different concentrations of nutrients. *Hydrobiologia*, **610**, 153.
- 518 Julien M.H. & Bourne A.S. (1986) Compensatory branching and changes in nitrogen
- content in the aquatic weed *Salvinia molesta* in response to disbudding. *Oecologia*, **70**, 250-257.
- Liu J.-Z., Ge Y.-M., Zhou Y.-F. & Tian G.-M. (2010) Effects of elevated CO<sub>2</sub> on growth
  and nutrient uptake of *Eichhornia crassipes* under four different nutrient levels.

523 *Water, Air, & Soil Pollution,* **212,** 387-394.

- 524 Liu Y., Oduor A.M., Zhang Z., Manea A., Tooth I.M., Leishman M.R., Xu X. & Van
- 525 Kleunen M. (2017) Do invasive alien plants benefit more from global
- 526 environmental change than native plants? *Global Change Biology*, **23**, 3363-3370.
- Longstreth D.J. (1989) Photosynthesis and photorespiration in freshwater emergent and
  floating plants. *Aquatic Botany*, 34, 287-299.
- Low-Décarie E., Bell G. & Fussmann G.F. (2015) CO<sub>2</sub> alters community composition and
  response to nutrient enrichment of freshwater phytoplankton. *Oecologia*, **177**, 875883.
- Manea A. & Leishman M.R. (2011) Competitive interactions between native and invasive
  exotic plant species are altered under elevated carbon dioxide. *Oecologia*, 165,
- 534 735-744.

535	Michelan T.S., Thomaz S.M., Mormul R.P. & Carvalho P. (2010) Effects of an exotic
536	invasive macrophyte (tropical signalgrass) on native plant community composition,
537	species richness and functional diversity. Freshwater Biology, 55, 1315-1326.
538	Netten J.J., Arts G.H., Gylstra R., Van Nes E.H., Scheffer M. & Roijackers R.M. (2010)
539	Effect of temperature and nutrients on the competition between free-floating
540	Salvinia natans and submerged Elodea nuttallii in mesocosms. Fundamental and
541	Applied Limnology/Archiv für Hydrobiologie, 177, 125-132.
542	Nie M., Lu M., Bell J., Raut S. & Pendall E. (2013) Altered root traits due to elevated
543	CO <sub>2</sub> : a meta-analysis. <i>Global Ecology and Biogeography</i> , <b>22</b> , 1095-1105.
544	Njambuya J., Stiers I. & Triest L. (2011) Competition between Lemna minuta and Lemna
545	minor at different nutrient concentrations. Aquatic Botany, 94, 158-164.
546	Oren R., Ellsworth D.S., Johnsen K.H., Phillips N., Ewers B.E., Maier C., Schäfer K.V.R.,
547	Mccarthy H., Hendrey G., Mcnulty S.G. & Katul G.G. (2001) Soil fertility limits
548	carbon sequestration by forest ecosystems in a CO <sub>2</sub> -enriched atmosphere. Nature,
549	<b>411,</b> 469.
550	Paolacci S., Jansen M.a.K. & Harrison S. (2018) Competition between Lemna minuta,
551	Lemna minor, and Azolla filiculoides. Growing fast or being steadfast? Frontiers in
552	<i>Chemistry</i> , <b>6</b> , 207.
553	Peeters E.T.H.M., Neefjes R.E.M. & Zuidam B.G.V. (2016) Competition between free-
554	floating plants is strongly driven by previously experienced phosphorus
555	concentrations in the water column. Plos One, 11, e0162780.
556	Pinto U., Maheshwari B.L. & Ollerton R.L. (2013) Analysis of long-term water quality for
557	effective river health monitoring in peri-urban landscapesa case study of the
558	HawkesburyNepean river system in NSW, Australia. Environmental Monitoring
559	and Assessment, 185, 4551.

- 560 Poorter H. (1993) Interspecific variation in the growth response of plants to an elevated
  561 ambient CO<sub>2</sub> concentration. *Vegetatio*, **104**, 77-97.
- 562 Poorter H. & Nagel O. (2000) The role of biomass allocation in the growth response of
- plants to different levels of light, CO<sub>2</sub>, nutrients and water: a quantitative review. *Functional Plant Biology*, 27, 1191-1191.
- 565 Poorter H. & Navas M.L. (2003) Plant growth and competition at elevated CO<sub>2</sub>: On
- 566 winners, losers and functional groups. *New Phytologist*, **157**, 175-198.
- 567 Poorter H., Niklas K.J., Reich P.B., Oleksyn J., Poot P. & Mommer L. (2012) Biomass
- allocation to leaves, stems and roots: Meta-analyses of interspecific variation and
  environmental control. *New Phytologist*, **193**, 30-50
- 570 Ray T.B., Mayne B.C., Toia R.E. & Peters G.A. (1979) *Azolla-Anabaena* relationship:
- 571 VIII. Photosynthetic characterization of the association and individual partners.
  572 *Plant Physiology*, **64**, 791-795.
- 573 Reich P.B., Hobbie S.E., Lee T., Ellsworth D.S., West J.B., Tilman D., Knops J.M.H.,
- 574 Naeem S. & Trost J. (2006) Nitrogen limitation constrains sustainability of
  575 ecosystem response to CO<sub>2</sub>. *Nature*, 440, 922.
- Riis T., Olesen B., Clayton J.S., Lambertini C., Brix H. & Sorrell B.K. (2012) Growth and
  morphology in relation to temperature and light availability during the
- 578 establishment of three invasive aquatic plant species. *Aquatic Botany*, **102**, 56-64.
- 579 Robinson E.A., Ryan G.D. & Newman J.A. (2012) A meta-analytical review of the effects
- 580 of elevated CO<sub>2</sub> on plant–arthropod interactions highlights the importance of
- 581 interacting environmental and biological variables. *New Phytologist*, **194**, 321-336.
- 582 Ryser P. (2006) The mysterious root length. *Plant and Soil*, **286**, 1-6.

- 583 Scheffer M., Szabo S., Gragnani A., Van Nes E.H., Rinaldi S., Kautsky N., Norberg J.,
- Roijackers R.M. & Franken R.J. (2003) Floating plant dominance as a stable state. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*, **100**, 4040-4045.
- 586 Stiers I., Njambuya J. & Triest L. (2011) Competitive abilities of invasive Lagarosiphon
- 587 major and native *Ceratophyllum demersum* in monocultures and mixed cultures in
- relation to experimental sediment dredging. *Aquatic Botany*, **95**, 161-166.
- 589 Strayer D.L. (2010) Alien species in fresh waters: ecological effects, interactions with
- 590 other stressors, and prospects for the future. *Freshwater Biology*, **55**, 152-174.
- Sullivan L., Wildova R., Goldberg D. & Vogel C. (2010) Growth of three cattail (*Typha*)
  taxa in response to elevated CO<sub>2</sub>. *Plant Ecology*, **207**, 121-129.
- 593 Tilman D. (2000) Causes, consequences and ethics of biodiversity. *Nature*, **405**, 208.
- Tipping P.W., Bauer L., Martin M.R. & Center T.D. (2009) Competition between *Salvinia minima* and *Spirodela polyrhiza* mediated by nutrient levels and herbivory. *Aquatic Botany*, **90**, 231-234.
- 597 Van Kempen M.M., Smolders A.J., Bögemann G.M., Lamers L.P. & Roelofs J.G. (2016)
- 598 Interacting effects of atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> enrichment and solar radiation on growth of 599 the aquatic fern *Azolla filiculoides*. *Freshwater Biology*, **61**, 596-606.
- Van T.K., Wheeler G.S. & Center T.D. (1999) Competition between *Hydrilla verticillata*and *Vallisneria americana* as influenced by soil fertility. *Aquatic Botany*, 62, 225-
- 602 233.
- Villamagna A.M. & Murphy B.R. (2010) Ecological and socio-economic impacts of
  invasive water hyacinth (*Eichhornia crassipes*): a review. *Freshwater Biology*, 55,
  282-298.
- 606 Wagner G.M. (1997) Azolla: A review of its biology and utilization. The Botanical
- 607 *Review*, **63**, 1-26.

- 608 Walther G.-R., Post E., Convey P., Menzel A., Parmesan C., Beebee T.J., Fromentin J.-
- M., Hoegh-Guldberg O. & Bairlein F. (2002) Ecological responses to recent
  climate change. *Nature*, **416**, 389.
- 611 Wang D., Heckathorn S.A., Wang X. & Philpott S.M. (2012) A meta-analysis of plant
- 612 physiological and growth responses to temperature and elevated CO<sub>2</sub>. *Oecologia*,
  613 **169**, 1-13.
- 614 Wersal R.M. & Madsen J.D. (2011) Influences of water column nutrient loading on
- 615 growth characteristics of the invasive aquatic macrophyte *Myriophyllum*

616 *aquaticum* (Vell.) Verdc. *Hydrobiologia*, **665**, 93-105.

Wundrow E.J., Carrillo J., Gabler C.A., Horn K.C. & Siemann E. (2012) Facilitation and
competition among invasive plants: A field experiment with alligatorweed and
water hyacinth. *Plos One*, 7, e48444.

### 621 Supplementary Materials

- 622 **Supplementary Table 1**: Summary ANOVA table showing the effect of the treatments on RGR and root length of *A. filiculoides* and *S. molesta*.
- 623 Significant effects are indicated in bold font style

	Factor(s)	Dependent variable						
Species		Relative Growth rate (RGR)		F	Root length			
		df	F	Р	df	F	Р	
Azolla	CO <sub>2</sub>	1, 71	69.036	<0.001	1, 40	16.375	<0.001	
	Nutrient	1,71	119.139	<0.001	1, 40	4.56	0.039	
	Competition	1,71	0.000	0.985	1, 40	6.048	0.018	
	CO <sub>2</sub> ×Nutrient	1, 71	1.287	0.260	1, 40	8.318	0.006	
	$CO_2 \times Competition$	1, 71	0.806	0.372	1, 40	0.158	0.693	
	Nutrient × Competition	1, 71	0.115	0.736	1, 40	1.545	0.221	
	$\text{CO}_2 \times \text{Nutrient} \times \text{Competition}$	1, 71	0.246	0.622	1, 40	0.050	0.824	
Salvinia	$CO_2$	1, 64	32.621	<0.001	1, 64	27.95	<0.001	
	Nutrient	1, 64	69.667	<0.001	1, 64	3.616	0.062	
	Competition	1,64	11.28	0.001	1, 64	1.148	0.288	

	$CO_2 \times Nutrient$	1, 64	14.418	<0.001	1,64	0.945	0.335
	$CO_2 \times Competition$	1, 64	0.882	0.351	1,64	3.229	0.077
	Nutrient $\times$ Competition	1, 64	3.069	0.085	1,64	0.336	0.564
	$CO_2 \times Nutrient \times Competition$	1, 64	0.339	0.563	1,64	0.207	0.650
624							
625							
626							
627							
628							
629							
630							
631							
632							

**Supplementary Table 2:** A summary of one-way Kruskal-Wallis test results showing the effect of treatments on the R:S of *A. filiculoides* and *S.* 

Factor	df	Ν	Н	Р
CO <sub>2</sub>	1	79	4.612	0.032
Nutrient	1	79	14.476	<0.001
Competition	1	79	0.505	0.477
$CO_2$	1	72	1.426	0.232
Nutrient	1	72	52.604	<0.001
Competition	1	72	0.427	0.414
	CO <sub>2</sub> Nutrient Competition CO <sub>2</sub> Nutrient	CO21Nutrient1Competition1CO21Nutrient1	$CO_2$ 1       79         Nutrient       1       79         Competition       1       79 $CO_2$ 1       72         Nutrient       1       72	$CO_2$ 1794.612Nutrient17914.476Competition1790.505 $CO_2$ 1721.426Nutrient17252.604

*molesta*. Significant effects are indicated in bold font style

# **CHAPTER SEVEN**

Discussion

#### 1 General summary

2 Freshwater ecosystems provide habitat to a disproportionately high number of 3 specialised plant and animal species compared to terrestrial and marine ecosystems 4 (Balian *et al.*, 2008). However, these ecosystems are experiencing severe declines in 5 biodiversity due to a number of interacting human-mediated threats including 6 overexploitation, flow modification, habitat degradation, eutrophication, climate change, 7 and invasive exotic species (Dudgeon et al., 2006). Some of these threats affect the 8 functioning of the biosphere and are thus referred to as global environmental change 9 factors. Despite being extremely species-rich and highly threatened (Abell *et al.*, 2008), 10 studies of freshwater ecosystems with regards to global environmental change are 11 relatively few compared to the terrestrial and marine ecosystems (Brundu, 2015). Through 12 a series of manipulative glasshouse experiments, this thesis explored how global change 13 environmental factors might affect the selected invasive exotic freshwater species in terms 14 of growth, reproduction, and functional traits relative to their native and naturalised 15 counterparts. Specifically, it examined the effects of rising atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> concentration 16 ([CO<sub>2</sub>]) and nutrient enrichment on common co-occurring freshwater plant species in 17 Australia. The aim of this final chapter is to synthesise the main findings of this thesis and 18 put them into a broader context of global change effects on freshwater ecosystems in 19 general.

As a starting point for this thesis, it was necessary to establish the current status of exotic freshwater plant species in Australia. A comprehensive inventory of the entire naturalised flora in Australia (~2700 species) has been established (Randall, 2007) and has been used for predicting future plant invasions (Duursma *et al.*, 2013), analysing drivers responsible for patterns of naturalisation (Dodd *et al.*, 2015), and identifying areas with

25 high naturalised species richness (Dodd *et al.*, 2016). However, these outcomes are broad 26 and generalise across many different ecosystems, necessitating ecosystem-specific 27 analyses to better direct management and monitoring practices. *Chapter 2* of this thesis 28 utilised a systematic descriptive approach using literature and database searches to 29 establish the current status of exotic freshwater plant species in Australia. Sixty-three 30 exotic freshwater plant species were identified as occurring in Australia, with the 31 ornamental plant trade recognised as the most important introduction pathway. Therefore, 32 it is unsurprising that these species are concentrated around areas with the highest human 33 population density (NSW, QLD and VIC). At the national level, these species represent 34 about 2% and <0.3% of the exotic and total Australian flora respectively. Despite forming 35 a very small proportion of the Australian flora, six of the 32 Weeds of National 36 Significance are exotic freshwater plant species 37 (http://www.environment.gov.au/biodiversity/invasive/weeds/weeds/lists/wons.html), 38 indicating their significant impacts. Moreover, ~40% of the naturalised freshwater plant 39 species are currently considered invasive either at federal or state and territory levels, 40 meaning freshwater ecosystems contribute a disproportionately high number of species to 41 the invasive exotic species pool in Australia. Therefore, an important question to consider 42 is whether ongoing global environmental change will increase the dominance of these 43 exotic species in vegetation assemblages (Leishman & Thomson, 2005; Leishman & 44 Gallagher, 2015). To provide some insight into this question, this thesis empirically tested 45 the effects of rising atmospheric  $[CO_2]$  and nutrient enrichment on a range of native, 46 naturalised and invasive exotic freshwater plant species in Chapters 3-6.

The overarching hypothesis of this thesis was that all species would have increased growth rates in response to both elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient enrichment with the highest growth rates expected to occur when both resources were enriched. More specifically, it

50 was hypothesised that the invasive exotic species would have the strongest responses to 51 elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient enrichment. However, the results indicate that plant growth 52 responses to the treatments were largely species-specific (Table 1).

53 Table 1: A summary of the growth responses of each study species under the different 54 experimental conditions across the data chapters, showing the percentage difference in 55 final dry mass of plants grown under enriched resource conditions relative to low resource 56 conditions. The numbers in brackets show the relevant thesis chapters. The arrow symbols 57 indicate a significant treatment effect (RGR increased with increasing resource supply  $(\uparrow)$ , 58 increased up to a threshold  $(\nearrow)$ ), zero (0) indicates no treatment effect and a dash (-) 59 indicates the treatment effect was not measured. Where there was a significant interaction 60 effect the main effect cells are left blank (e.g. Zantedeschia aethiopica).

Species	Status	Nutrient	CO <sub>2</sub>	Competition Nutrient ×	
		enrichment	enrichment		<b>CO</b> <sub>2</sub>
Azolla filiculoides	Native	↑416% (6)	↑80% (4)	0 (6)	0 (6)
			↑194% (6)		
Vallisneria spiralis	Native	<u>↑</u> 30% (3)	0 (4)	-	-
Ludwigia palustris	Naturalised	0 (5)	↑60% (5)	-	0 (5)
Mentha aquatica	Naturalised	0 (5)	0 (5)	-	0 (5)
Rorippa nasturtium-					
aquaticum	Naturalised	↑33% (5)	0 (5)	-	0 (5)
Egeria densa	Invasive	↑192% (3)	-	-	-
Mentha pulegium	Invasive	<u>↑</u> 39% (5)	0 (5)	-	0 (5)
Salvinia molesta	Invasive	∕113% (3)	0 (4)	↑ <b>29%</b> (6)	↑ <b>288% (6)</b>
Zantedeschia					
aethiopica	Invasive			-	109% (5)

61	In the experiments where the nutrient (Chapter 3) and CO <sub>2</sub> (Chapter 4) effects
62	were tested separately, it was predicted that elevated [CO2] and nutrient enrichment would
63	each enhance plant growth rates. In Chapter 3, the growth of the invasive E. densa and
64	native V. spiralis increased with increasing nutrient concentration as expected while the
65	invasive S. molesta growth did not differ at nitrate concentrations above 0.1 mg N-NO <sub>3</sub> L <sup>-</sup>
66	<sup>1</sup> . The findings for <i>E. densa</i> and <i>V. spiralis</i> are similar to those of other studies of members
67	of Hydrocharitaceae (Ozimek, van Donk & Gulati, 1993; Barker et al., 2008; Li, Zhang
68	& Jeppesen, 2008). In <i>Chapter 4</i> , elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] did not affect growth of the native V.
69	spiralis and invasive S. molesta but enhanced that of the native A. filiculoides. As a
70	species with CAM metabolic pathway (Helder & Van Harmelen, 1982) that uses both free
71	CO <sub>2</sub> and HCO <sub>3<sup>-</sup></sub> (Hussner <i>et al.</i> , 2016), <i>V. spiralis</i> is less carbon limited and was therefore
72	not expected to be responsive to elevated [CO2]. Moreover, studies have shown that when
73	DIC was not limiting, growth of other submerged species of the same family
74	(Hydrocharitaceae) did not differ across a [CO <sub>2</sub> ] gradient of 400-800 ppm (Hussner et al.,
75	2019). However, it was surprising that S. molesta, a C <sub>3</sub> species, was not responsive to
76	elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] given that nutrient was not limiting (see <i>Chapter 3</i> ). Other studies (Cary &
77	Weerts, 1984; Madsen & Wersal, 2008) and the results of <i>Chapter 3</i> showed that <i>S</i> .
78	molesta reaches its growth threshold at relatively low nutrient concentrations. In addition,
79	the results of <i>Chapter</i> $6$ showed that when either CO <sub>2</sub> or nutrient availability was
80	increased, S. molesta growth was only marginally enhanced further by enrichment of the
81	other resource. Considering these observations, it is unsurprising that S. molesta growth
82	did not respond to elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] in <i>Chapter 4</i> since the non-limited nutrient supply
83	would have enabled the plants to reach their growth threshold under ambient [CO <sub>2</sub> ].
84	In the experiments where the effects of both $CO_2$ and nutrient concentration were

84 In the experiments where the effects of both CO<sub>2</sub> and nutrient concentration were 85 tested simultaneously, it was predicted that while each factor could enhance plant growth

86	independently, the greatest growth response would occur under enrichment of both
87	resources. Of the seven species grown across these experiments (Chapter 5 and 6), only
88	the growth of the invasive species S. molesta and Z. aethiopica was affected by an
89	interaction between [CO <sub>2</sub> ] and nutrient enrichment. More specifically, both species had
90	significantly lower growth rates under ambient [CO2] and low nutrient concentration
91	compared to all other treatment combinations. However, their growth rate was not affected
92	when both resources were enriched relative to when only one was enriched. For S.
93	molesta, this unexpected result may be attributed to it having reached its growth threshold
94	as discussed above. For Z. aethiopica, this unexpected growth response to resource
95	enrichment (both $CO_2$ and nutrients) may be due to its growth being constrained by the
96	size of the tub, which is an important determinant in the growth of potted plants (Poorter et
97	al., 2012). Alternatively, the growth of both species may have been limited by other
98	environmental factors such as micronutrients, space and intraspecific competition which
20	
99	meant they could not utilise any other additional resources such as CO <sub>2</sub> and nutrients.
	meant they could not utilise any other additional resources such as $CO_2$ and nutrients. Growth of the remaining species studied in <i>Chapter 5</i> and 6 (except <i>M. aquatica</i> )
99	
99 100	Growth of the remaining species studied in <i>Chapter 5</i> and 6 (except <i>M. aquatica</i> )
99 100 101	Growth of the remaining species studied in <i>Chapter 5</i> and 6 (except <i>M. aquatica</i> ) was stimulated by either one of the factors ( $CO_2 - L$ . <i>palustris</i> ; nutrients - <i>M. pulegium</i> and
99 100 101 102	Growth of the remaining species studied in <i>Chapter 5</i> and 6 (except <i>M. aquatica</i> ) was stimulated by either one of the factors ( $CO_2 - L.$ palustris; nutrients - <i>M. pulegium</i> and <i>R. nasturtium-aquaticum</i> ) or both factors independently of each other ( <i>A. filiculoides</i> ).
<ul><li>99</li><li>100</li><li>101</li><li>102</li><li>103</li></ul>	Growth of the remaining species studied in <i>Chapter 5</i> and <i>6</i> (except <i>M. aquatica</i> ) was stimulated by either one of the factors (CO <sub>2</sub> - <i>L. palustris</i> ; nutrients - <i>M. pulegium</i> and <i>R. nasturtium-aquaticum</i> ) or both factors independently of each other ( <i>A. filiculoides</i> ). Although an interactive effect between elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] and nutrient enrichment was
<ol> <li>99</li> <li>100</li> <li>101</li> <li>102</li> <li>103</li> <li>104</li> </ol>	Growth of the remaining species studied in <i>Chapter 5</i> and 6 (except <i>M. aquatica</i> ) was stimulated by either one of the factors ( $CO_2 - L.$ palustris; nutrients - <i>M. pulegium</i> and <i>R. nasturtium-aquaticum</i> ) or both factors independently of each other ( <i>A. filiculoides</i> ). Although an interactive effect between elevated [ $CO_2$ ] and nutrient enrichment was predicted, studies have shown that elevated [ $CO_2$ ] (Cao & Ruan, 2015; Hussner <i>et al.</i> ,
<ul> <li>99</li> <li>100</li> <li>101</li> <li>102</li> <li>103</li> <li>104</li> <li>105</li> </ul>	Growth of the remaining species studied in <i>Chapter 5</i> and <i>6</i> (except <i>M. aquatica</i> ) was stimulated by either one of the factors (CO <sub>2</sub> - <i>L. palustris</i> ; nutrients - <i>M. pulegium</i> and <i>R. nasturtium-aquaticum</i> ) or both factors independently of each other ( <i>A. filiculoides</i> ). Although an interactive effect between elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] and nutrient enrichment was predicted, studies have shown that elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] (Cao & Ruan, 2015; Hussner <i>et al.</i> , 2016; van Kempen <i>et al.</i> , 2016) and nutrient enrichment (Fernandez-Going, Even &
<ul> <li>99</li> <li>100</li> <li>101</li> <li>102</li> <li>103</li> <li>104</li> <li>105</li> <li>106</li> </ul>	Growth of the remaining species studied in <i>Chapter 5</i> and 6 (except <i>M. aquatica</i> ) was stimulated by either one of the factors ( $CO_2 - L.$ palustris; nutrients - <i>M. pulegium</i> and <i>R. nasturtium-aquaticum</i> ) or both factors independently of each other ( <i>A. filiculoides</i> ). Although an interactive effect between elevated [ $CO_2$ ] and nutrient enrichment was predicted, studies have shown that elevated [ $CO_2$ ] (Cao & Ruan, 2015; Hussner <i>et al.</i> , 2016; van Kempen <i>et al.</i> , 2016) and nutrient enrichment (Fernandez-Going, Even & Simpson, 2013) often enhance freshwater plant growth rates independently of each other.
<ol> <li>99</li> <li>100</li> <li>101</li> <li>102</li> <li>103</li> <li>104</li> <li>105</li> <li>106</li> <li>107</li> </ol>	Growth of the remaining species studied in <i>Chapter 5</i> and <i>6</i> (except <i>M. aquatica</i> ) was stimulated by either one of the factors (CO <sub>2</sub> - <i>L. palustris</i> ; nutrients - <i>M. pulegium</i> and <i>R. nasturtium-aquaticum</i> ) or both factors independently of each other ( <i>A. filiculoides</i> ). Although an interactive effect between elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] and nutrient enrichment was predicted, studies have shown that elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] (Cao & Ruan, 2015; Hussner <i>et al.</i> , 2016; van Kempen <i>et al.</i> , 2016) and nutrient enrichment (Fernandez-Going, Even & Simpson, 2013) often enhance freshwater plant growth rates independently of each other. Surprisingly, <i>M. aquatica</i> was unaffected by either elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] or nutrient enrichment.
<ul> <li>99</li> <li>100</li> <li>101</li> <li>102</li> <li>103</li> <li>104</li> <li>105</li> <li>106</li> <li>107</li> <li>108</li> </ul>	Growth of the remaining species studied in <i>Chapter 5</i> and <i>6</i> (except <i>M. aquatica</i> ) was stimulated by either one of the factors (CO <sub>2</sub> - <i>L. palustris</i> ; nutrients - <i>M. pulegium</i> and <i>R. nasturtium-aquaticum</i> ) or both factors independently of each other ( <i>A. filiculoides</i> ). Although an interactive effect between elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] and nutrient enrichment was predicted, studies have shown that elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] (Cao & Ruan, 2015; Hussner <i>et al.</i> , 2016; van Kempen <i>et al.</i> , 2016) and nutrient enrichment (Fernandez-Going, Even & Simpson, 2013) often enhance freshwater plant growth rates independently of each other. Surprisingly, <i>M. aquatica</i> was unaffected by either elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] or nutrient enrichment. While unexpected, this was not surprising as a previous study has reported similar

111	Generally, doubling [CO <sub>2</sub> ] has been shown to result in an average of 41% increase
112	in biomass production among the terrestrial C3 species, although species-specific
113	differences have been observed with N-fixing species (as also shown by A. filiculoides in
114	Chapter 4 and 6 of this thesis) being the most responsive (Poorter, 1993; Poorter &
115	Navas, 2003; Wang et al., 2012). However, contrary to findings of other studies, the
116	majority of the species studied in this thesis did not respond to elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ]. This
117	disparity could be explained by the relatively small difference between ambient and
118	elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] used in this thesis (200 ppm) compared to similar studies of freshwater
119	plant species where the elevated [CO <sub>2</sub> ] treatment ranged between 3- to 10-times the
120	ambient concentration (Xie et al., 2004; Yan, Yu & Li, 2006; Cao & Ruan, 2015; Titus
121	& Wendlberger, 2016; van Kempen et al., 2016). Furthermore, since photosynthetic CO <sub>2</sub>
122	assimilation rates of C <sub>3</sub> species tend to increase only marginally as [CO <sub>2</sub> ] rises above 400
123	ppm (Caemmerer & Edmondson, 1986; Bazzaz, 1990; Ainsworth & Rogers, 2007), it is
124	not surprising that plant growth differences between ambient (400 ppm) and elevated (600
125	ppm) [CO <sub>2</sub> ] in this thesis were only marginal.

126 Overall, the results across the data chapters of this thesis did not provide evidence 127 for a consistent interaction effect between  $[CO_2]$  and nutrient concentration on growth 128 differences among the invasive, native and naturalised study species in response to these 129 factors. Nevertheless, within species growth differences between treatment levels tended 130 to be more dramatic for the invasive species, except *M. pulegium*, compared to the native 131 and naturalised species, except A. *filiculoides*. However, these dramatic growth responses 132 of the invasive species did not always translate into them having greater growth rates 133 compared to their native counterparts. For example, in *Chapter 5* the invasive species Z. 134 aethiopica had significantly lower RGR than three naturalised study species irrespective of 135 the treatment.

136 Based on the findings of this thesis, it is suggested that nutrient enrichment is 137 likely to be a more important determinant of community structure and function of 138 freshwater systems than rising atmospheric  $[CO_2]$ . Furthermore, these results indicate that 139 species responses to global change environmental factors may be better predicted based on 140 functional groups rather than invasive status. For example, the free-floating native A. 141 filiculoides (N-fixing) consistently showed enhanced growth responses under elevated 142 [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient enrichment where it had greater RGR compared to even the free-143 floating invasive exotic S. molesta across the chapters. This is consistent with studies of 144 N-fixing terrestrial plants (Hungate et al., 1999; Rogers, Ainsworth & Leakey, 2009; Li 145 et al., 2017) and aquatic free-living cyanobacteria (Levitan et al., 2007; Czerny, Barcelos 146 e Ramos & Riebesell, 2009) that have shown that elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] increases the N-fixation 147 capacity of the species and hence their growth rates. Considering these findings, N-fixing 148 plants will likely be the most responsive to resource-enriched conditions in freshwater 149 systems in the future. If this occurs, the natural senescence and mineralization of the N-150 fixers could exacerbate the eutrophication of freshwater bodies, thus favouring exotic 151 species invasions with cascading detrimental impacts on submerged plant communities as 152 well as at higher trophic levels (e.g. herbivores). This is based on the fact that facilitation 153 among aquatic plant species is quite common (Espinar et al., 2002; Boschilia, Oliveira & 154 Thomaz, 2008; Michelan et al., 2010; Wundrow et al., 2012) and is supported to some 155 extent by the finding that A. *filiculoides* had a facilitative effect on S. *molesta*, which 156 points to a potential shift towards free-floating species dominated communities in the 157 future. 158

159

160

#### 161 Experimental caveats

162 Although the glasshouse experiments in this thesis tried to simulate field 163 conditions as realistically as possible, it is important to acknowledge aspects of the 164 experiments that need to be considered when applying the results to a field context. 165 Firstly, in the experiments that had submerged study species (*Chapters 3* and 4), 166 air was continuously bubbled into the water column to simulate flowing waters. The 167 purpose of doing this was to stimulate turbulence which tends to reduce the boundary 168 layer thickness, thereby enhancing the supply rates of dissolved inorganic carbon (DIC) 169 and nutrients to the plants (Madsen & Søndergaard, 1983; Bornette & Puijalon, 2011). 170 Although the pH of the water column was measured as a proxy for DIC availability in 171 both experiments it would have been ideal to measure DIC directly to ascertain whether 172 bubbling had the intended effect. 173 Secondly, due to glasshouse space constraints, it was necessary in *Chapter 3* that 174 multiple plants were grown in each tub. To account for this, each individual tub was

175 considered to be one experimental unit and its random effect was included in the statistical

176 models. It is also important to acknowledge that due constraints (mainly species

177 unavailability), it was not always possible to control for all the differences (e.g.

178 phylogeny, growth forms, and physiology) that might confound the treatment effects.

179 However, these differences were always highlighted (e.g. V. spiralis – CAM, A.

180 *filiculoides* – N-fixing, Z. *aethiopica* – rhizomatous) and their possible influence

181 discussed.

Finally, significant algal growth was a commonly encountered problem in all of the experiments. Algae was considered to be detrimental to the growth of the study species because if uncontrolled it competes for nutrients with all species regardless of growth form

and reduces light availability to the submerged species. A number of different techniques
were utilised to reduce the algal effect on plant growth including regularly circulating the
nutrient medium through an ultraviolet sterilisation unit (*Chapter 3*) as well as replacing
the nutrient media and thoroughly cleaning the tubs on a regular basis (*Chapter 4* and 6).
Although these techniques did not prevent algal growth completely, they were relatively
successful in reducing its impact on plant growth. However, some algal influence cannot
be ruled out.

192

## 193 Future management and research directions

194 Despite many statutory and regulatory measures being in place at the local-, state-195 and federal-levels to control the trade of invasive exotic species in Australia, a few 196 continue to be traded. Therefore, a stricter enforcement of these controls is necessary by 197 regularly assessing nursery compliance through the monitoring of the online aquarium 198 market. For naturalised species, it is important that weed risk assessments are regularly 199 undertaken in light of ongoing global environmental change. Furthermore, it is also vital 200 that wild populations of these species are monitored regularly to determine if they are 201 spreading or not. Finally, accessing information on the ecology and management of exotic 202 freshwater plants at the local- and state-level is difficult as data is contained within 203 disparate sites. Therefore, a centralised system of collating and storing data would be 204 desirable for better knowledge sharing.

The species-specific growth responses of the tested species to the experimental conditions underscore the importance of phylogeny. When designing experiments to understand mechanisms that drive species responses to environmental change (e.g. origin and physiology), it is advised that where possible, closely related species with the same

209 growth form be used. However, if the objective is to evaluate how the invasive species 210 might alter freshwater ecosystems under changed environmental conditions, then using 211 species of different growth forms, origin, and physiological pathways may be more 212 informative. In addition, not much insight would be gained when comparing the native vs 213 invasive species responses, if the native species are also strong invaders elsewhere as is 214 the case with *Azolla filiculoides*. It would therefore be more insightful to think of species 215 functional groups when making comparisons rather than just origin.

216 At a species-level, this thesis provides evidence that S. molesta, the focal study 217 species of this thesis and one of the worst freshwater invaders globally (Courchamp, 218 2013), warrants continued management attention. Despite the use of the biological control 219 Salvinia weevil Cyrtobagous salviniae (Curculionidae) being declared successful in the 220 1980s, S. molesta continues to persist in many water bodies in eastern Australia (Schooler 221 et al., 2011). Because of its superior competitive ability in enclosed spaces where the risk 222 of native species displacement is high, future management of this species should target 223 eradication in small enclosed oligotrophic water bodies (e.g. ponds and dams). In contrast, 224 for larger dynamic water bodies where the risk of spread is high but the risk of species 225 displacement is low, prevention of entry of invasive exotic species should be the 226 management goal.

As stated above, this research field is in its infancy and is ripe for further research efforts. To date, the majority of experiments on this topic including the ones in this thesis have investigated the responses of a few species to one or two global change environmental factors over a short period of time. If we consider what we have learnt from similar studies in the terrestrial realm it is clear that multiple global change environmental factors can interact with one another to alter plant performance (Ainsworth & Rogers,

2007; Wang *et al.*, 2012). Furthermore, these changes in performance are not necessarily
evident in the short term. Therefore, future research efforts should put an emphasis on
testing multiple environmental factors simultaneously over a long term period. These
studies should also incorporate factors known to affect plant performance but have
received less research attention including pH, turbidity, altered thermal and hydrological
regimes and biotic factors such as herbivory.

239 As alluded to earlier in the 'experimental caveats' section, the majority of 240 experiments on freshwater plant species responses to global change environmental factors 241 have been conducted in controlled glasshouse conditions. As glasshouse and field 242 conditions can vary greatly (Poorter *et al.*, 2016), it is important to verify the findings of 243 controlled glasshouse experiments in order to be confident that they can be applied to 244 natural environments. The best way to do this is to conduct large scale field experiments, 245 as have been carried out in terrestrial ecosystems for decades (e.g. FACE experiments, 246 open top chambers). However, the feasibility of these experiments in an aquatic context is 247 questionable due to the large costs and logistic difficulties often associated with them 248 (Norby et al., 2016). Nevertheless, if conducted, they would provide the necessary link 249 between glasshouse experiments and the natural environment that would ensure that the 250 correct management decisions have been and continue to be made for freshwater 251 ecosystems.

252

### 253 Conclusion

The ornamental plant trade has led to the introduction of many plant species into novel ecosystems. A small proportion of these species have naturalised in their introduced range while an even smaller proportion has spread and become invasive. Usually, species

257 with wide environmental tolerances are selected for importation and are likely to benefit 258 from ongoing global environmental change. However, there is insufficient evidence that 259 global change affects exotic species differently than native species in freshwater systems. 260 The overarching aim of this thesis was to address this question in terms of freshwater plant 261 responses to rising atmospheric [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient enrichment. Overall, the effect of 262 elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>] and nutrient enrichment on freshwater plant species was found to be 263 largely species-specific with no clear trend emerging, in terms of invasive status, from the 264 experiments. Nevertheless, this thesis has contributed a meaningful body of work that 265 provides an important insight into the poorly understood research field of freshwater plant 266 ecology and global change. 267 268 References

269 Abell R., Thieme M.L., Revenga C., Bryer M., Kottelat M., Bogutskaya N., Coad B.,

270 Mandrak N., Balderas S.C. & Bussing W. (2008) Freshwater ecoregions of the

world: A new map of biogeographic units for freshwater biodiversity conservation. *BioScience*, 58, 403-414.

Ainsworth E.A. & Rogers A. (2007) The response of photosynthesis and stomatal

274 conductance to rising [CO<sub>2</sub>]: mechanisms and environmental interactions. *Plant*,
275 *Cell & Environment*, **30**, 258-270.

Balian E., Segers H., Lévêque C. & Martens K. (2008) The freshwater animal diversity
assessment: An overview of the results. *Hydrobiologia*, **595**, 627-637.

Barker T., Hatton K., O'connor M., Connor L. & Moss B. (2008) Effects of nitrate load on
submerged plant biomass and species richness: results of a mesocosm experiment.

280 Fundamental and Applied Limnology / Archiv für Hydrobiologie, **173**, 89-100.

- Bazzaz F.A. (1990) The response of natural ecosystems to the rising global CO<sub>2</sub> levels.
   Annual Review of Ecology and Systematics, 21, 167-196.
- Bornette G. & Puijalon S. (2011) Response of aquatic plants to abiotic factors: a review.
   *Aquatic Sciences*, **73**, 1-14.
- Boschilia S.M., Oliveira E.F. & Thomaz S.M. (2008) Do aquatic macrophytes co-occur
  randomly? An analysis of null models in a tropical floodplain. *Oecologia*, **156**,
  203-214.
- Brundu G. (2015) Plant invaders in European and Mediterranean inland waters: Profiles,
  distribution, and threats. *Hydrobiologia*, **746**, 61-79.
- 290 Caemmerer S. & Edmondson D. (1986) Relationship between steady-state gas exchange,

*in vivo* Ribulose Bisphosphate Carboxylase activity and some carbon reduction

cycle intermediates in *Raphanus sativus*. *Functional Plant Biology*, **13**, 669-688.

Cao J. & Ruan H. (2015) Responses of the submerged macrophyte *Vallisneria natans* to
elevated CO<sub>2</sub> and temperature. *Aquatic Biology*, 23, 119-127.

295 Cary P.R. & Weerts P.G.J. (1984) Growth of Salvinia molesta as affected by water

- temperature and nutrition. III. Nitrogen-phosphorus interactions and effect of pH. *Aquatic Botany*, **19**, 171-182.
- 298 Courchamp F. (2013) Monster fern makes IUCN invader list. *Nature*, **498**, 37.
- 299 Czerny J., Barcelos E Ramos J. & Riebesell U. (2009) Influence of elevated CO<sub>2</sub>
- 300 concentrations on cell division and nitrogen fixation rates in the bloom-forming
  301 cyanobacterium *Nodularia spumigena*. *Biogeosciences*, 6, 1865-1875.
- 302 Dodd A.J., Burgman M.A., Mccarthy M.A. & Ainsworth N. (2015) The changing patterns
- 303 of plant naturalization in Australia. *Diversity and Distributions*, **21**, 1038-1050.

304	Dodd A.J., Mccarthy M.A., Ainsworth N. & Burgman M.A. (2016) Identifying hotspots of
305	alien plant naturalisation in Australia: Approaches and predictions. Biological
306	Invasions, 18, 631-645.
307	Dudgeon D., Arthington A.H., Gessner M.O., Kawabata ZI., Knowler D.J., Lévêque C.,
308	Naiman R.J., Prieur-Richard AH., Soto D. & Stiassny M.L. (2006) Freshwater
309	biodiversity: Importance, threats, status and conservation challenges. Biological
310	<i>Reviews</i> , <b>81</b> , 163-182.
311	Duursma D.E., Gallagher R.V., Roger E., Hughes L., Downey P.O. & Leishman M.R.
312	(2013) Next-generation invaders? Hotspots for naturalised sleeper weeds in
313	Australia under future climates. Plos One, 8, e84222.
314	Espinar J.L., García L.V., García Murillo P. & Toja J. (2002) Submerged macrophyte
315	zonation in a Mediterranean salt marsh: A facilitation effect from established
316	helophytes? Journal of Vegetation Science, 13, 831-840.
317	Fernandez-Going B., Even T. & Simpson J. (2013) The effect of different nutrient
318	concentrations on the growth rate and nitrogen storage of watercress (Nasturtium
319	officinale R. Br.). Hydrobiologia, 705, 63-74.
320	Helder R. & Van Harmelen M. (1982) Carbon assimilation pattern in the submerged
321	leaves of the aquatic angiosperm: Vallisneria spiralis L. Plant Biology, 31, 281-
322	295.
323	Hungate B.A., Dijkstra P., Johnson D.W., Hinkle C.R. & Drake B.G. (1999) Elevated CO <sub>2</sub>
324	increases nitrogen fixation and decreases soil nitrogen mineralization in Florida
325	scrub oak. Global Change Biology, 5, 781-789.
326	Hussner A., Mettler-Altmann T., Weber A.P. & Sand-Jensen K. (2016) Acclimation of
327	photosynthesis to supersaturated CO <sub>2</sub> in aquatic plant bicarbonate users.
328	Freshwater Biology, <b>61</b> , 1720-1732.

329	Hussner A., Smith R., Mettler-Altmann T., Hill M.P. & Coetzee J. (2019) Simulated
330	global increases in atmospheric CO <sub>2</sub> alter the tissue composition, but not the
331	growth of some submerged aquatic plant bicarbonate users growing in DIC rich
332	waters. Aquatic Botany, 153, 44-50.
333	Leishman M.R. & Gallagher R.V. (2015) Will there be a shift to alien-dominated
334	vegetation assemblages under climate change? Diversity and Distributions, 21,
335	848-852.
336	Leishman M.R. & Thomson V.P. (2005) Experimental evidence for the effects of
337	additional water, nutrients and physical disturbance on invasive plants in low
338	fertility Hawkesbury Sandstone soils, Sydney, Australia. Journal of Ecology, 93,
339	38-49.
340	Levitan O., Roseberg G., Setlik I., Setlikova E., Grigel J., Klepetar J., Prasil O. & Berma-
341	Frank I. (2007) Elevated CO <sub>2</sub> enhances nitrogen fixation and growth in the marine
342	cyanobacterium Trichodesmium. Global Change Biology, 13, 531-538.
343	Li W., Zhang Z. & Jeppesen E. (2008) The response of Vallisneria spinulosa
344	(Hydrocharitaceae) to different loadings of ammonia and nitrate at moderate
345	phosphorus concentration: A mesocosm approach. Freshwater Biology, 53, 2321-
346	2330.
347	Li Y., Yu Z., Liu X., Mathesius U., Wang G., Tang C., Wu J., Liu J., Zhang S. & Jin J.
348	(2017) Elevated CO <sub>2</sub> Increases nitrogen fixation at the reproductive phase
349	contributing to various yield responses of soybean cultivars. Frontiers in Plant
350	<i>Science</i> , <b>8</b> , 1546.
351	Madsen J.D. & Wersal R.M. (2008) Growth regulation of Salvinia molesta by pH and
352	available water column nutrients. Journal of Freshwater Ecology, 23, 305-313.

353	Madsen T.V. & Søndergaard M. (1983) The effects of current velocity on the
354	photosynthesis of <i>Callitriche stagnalis</i> scop. <i>Aquatic Botany</i> , <b>15</b> , 187-193.
355	Michelan T.S., Thomaz S.M., Mormul R.P. & Carvalho P. (2010) Effects of an exotic
356	invasive macrophyte (tropical signalgrass) on native plant community composition,
357	species richness and functional diversity. Freshwater Biology, 55, 1315-1326.
358	Norby R.J., De Kauwe M.G., Domingues T.F., Duursma R.A., Ellsworth D.S., Goll D.S.,
359	Lapola D.M., Luus K.A., Mackenzie A.R., Medlyn B.E., Pavlick R., Rammig A.,
360	Smith B., Thomas R., Thonicke K., Walker A.P., Yang X. & Zaehle S. (2016)
361	Model-data synthesis for the next generation of forest free-air CO <sub>2</sub> enrichment
362	(FACE) experiments. New Phytologist, 209, 17-28.
363	Ozimek T., Van Donk E. & Gulati R.D. (1993) Growth and nutrient uptake by two species
364	of <i>Elodea</i> in experimental conditions and their role in nutrient accumulation in a
365	macrophyte-dominated lake. In: Nutrient Dynamics and Retention in Land/Water
366	Ecotones of Lowland, Temperate Lakes and Rivers. (Eds A. Hillbricht-Ilkowska &
367	E. Pieczyńska), pp. 13-18. Springer Netherlands, Dordrecht.
368	Pedersen O. & Sand-Jensen K. (1997) Transpiration does not control growth and nutrient
369	supply in the amphibious plant Mentha aquatica. Plant, Cell & Environment, 20,
370	117-123.
371	Poorter H. (1993) Interspecific variation in the growth response of plants to an elevated
372	ambient CO <sub>2</sub> concentration. <i>Vegetatio</i> , <b>104</b> , 77-97.
373	Poorter H., Bühler J., Van Dusschoten D., Climent J. & Postma J.A. (2012) Pot size
374	matters: a meta-analysis of the effects of rooting volume on plant growth.
375	Functional Plant Biology, <b>39</b> , 839-850.
376	Poorter H., Fiorani F., Pieruschka R., Wojciechowski T., Putten W.H., Kleyer M., Schurr
377	U. & Postma J. (2016) Pampered inside, pestered outside? Differences and

- 378 similarities between plants growing in controlled conditions and in the field. *New*379 *Phytologist*, **212**, 838-855.
- Poorter H. & Navas M.L. (2003) Plant growth and competition at elevated CO<sub>2</sub>: On
  winners, losers and functional groups. *New Phytologist*, **157**, 175-198.
- 382 Randall R.P. (2007) *The introduced flora of Australia and its weed status*, CRC for

383 Australian Weed Management Adelaide.

- Rogers A., Ainsworth E.A. & Leakey A.D.B. (2009) Will elevated carbon dioxide
  concentration amplify the benefits of nitrogen fixation in legumes? *Plant*
- 386 *Physiology*, **151**, 1009.
- 387 Schooler S.S., Salau B., Julien M.H. & Ives A.R. (2011) Alternative stable states explain
  388 unpredictable biological control of *Salvinia molesta* in Kakadu. *Nature*, **470**, 86389 89.
- Titus J.E. & Wendlberger S.J. (2016) Gauging submersed plant response to CO<sub>2</sub>

391 enrichment: Pot size matters. *Aquatic Botany*, **134**, 82-86.

- 392 Van Kempen M.M., Smolders A.J., Bögemann G.M., Lamers L.P. & Roelofs J.G. (2016)
- Interacting effects of atmospheric CO<sub>2</sub> enrichment and solar radiation on growth of
  the aquatic fern *Azolla filiculoides*. *Freshwater Biology*, **61**, 596-606.
- 395 Wang D., Heckathorn S.A., Wang X. & Philpott S.M. (2012) A meta-analysis of plant

396 physiological and growth responses to temperature and elevated CO<sub>2</sub>. *Oecologia*,
397 **169**, 1-13.

Wundrow E.J., Carrillo J., Gabler C.A., Horn K.C. & Siemann E. (2012) Facilitation and
competition among invasive plants: A field experiment with alligatorweed and
water hyacinth. *Plos One*, 7, e48444.

- 401 Xie Y., Yu D., Geng X., Yang Y. & Huang Y. (2004) Phenotypic plasticity in the
- 402 submersed macrophyte *Potamogeton crispus* as a response to elevated [CO<sub>2</sub>].
- 403 *Journal of Freshwater Ecology*, **19**, 701-708.
- 404 Yan X., Yu D. & Li Y.-K. (2006) The effects of elevated CO<sub>2</sub> on clonal growth and
- 405 nutrient content of submerge plant Vallisneria spinulosa. Chemosphere, 62, 595-
- 406 601.